

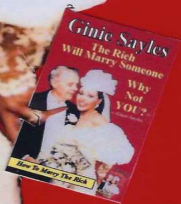
Ginie Sayles

The Rich Will Marry Someone

Why
Not
YOU?™
—Ginie Sayles

Featured in the
PBS Special
“People Like Us:
**Social Class
In America**”
and major Media
Worldwide

How To Marry The Rich
For Both Men and Women



*“The Rich Will
Marry Someone,
Why Not YOU?”*

**How To Marry
The Rich**

by **Ginie Sayles**

**FOR BOTH MEN AND
WOMEN**

With

Updated Information

MEDIA

***This is a Partial List
As seen on:***

***Front Page of THE
WALL STREET
JOURNAL***

***Cover Story for
COSMOPOLITAN***

MAGAZINE
MARIE CLAIRE
The PBS Special
PEOPLE LIKE US:
SOCIAL CLASS IN
AMERICA

Several CNN Interviews
CNN Valentine Special
BBC
CNBC
CBS, NBC, FOX

MAXIM

EXTRA!

THE VIEW

OPRAH (twice)

JOAN RIVERS

A Special 48 HOURS

Court TV as an Expert

Too many talk shows to

name them all

—plus Worldwide

Media

COPYRIGHT

HOW TO MARRY THE RICH “The Rich Will Marry Someone, Why Not You?”™

Copyright © 2014 Ginie Sayles

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

Copyright © 1987 Ginie Sayles seminar and audio

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

Copyright © 1991 by Ginie Sayles

GeMar Publications

Copyright © 1992 by Ginie Polo Sayles

Berkley Books Publication

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

Cover Photograph of the author and her husband, Ginie and Reed Sayles, by Mary Ann Sherman; owned by Ginie Sayles

Copyright 1994 Ginie Sayles on Video/DVD
ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

**GINIE'S GIRLS aka GOLD DIGGERS ART
ILLUSTRATIONS by GINIE SAYLES**

Copyright 1996, 2011, 2014 © Ginie Sayles
ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

This book may not be reproduced in whole or
in part by any means whatsoever, without
written permission from the author.

For information contact giniesayles.com

*Because of the dynamic changes of
technology; certain web addresses or
Internet references contained in this book
may change or lose validity.*

The opinions expressed in this book are not
given as advice to anyone but as shared
information the author found useful in her own

life. Use of the pronoun “you” or its implied use is strictly for literary aesthetics and is employed in an impersonal sense. The author and publishers are not liable for any actions taken by any person or persons, nor for any results obtained through the application of information contained within this book. Further reading of this book is irrevocable acceptance of personal liability solely by the reader.

ISBN: 978-0-9628856-7-9

This Digital Edition is by
GeMar Publications
United States Of America

DEDICATION

*With Love and Pride to
Little VIRGINIA RUTH*

*—A lovable child whose
needs were great. I could
count on you, Virginia Ruth;
you didn't let me down. And
you could count on me,
Virginia Ruth; I didn't let you
down. This book is to you and*

for you.

CONTENTS

WARNING: This book contains
Controversial Viewpoints.

Title Page

Media

Copyright

Dedication

Preface: The Social Impact Of This Book

Foreword By Reed Sayles

Introduction: This Is Ginie Sayles

Part I

YOU

1. [You Are Wonderful](#)
2. [Your Dreams](#)
3. [Your Relationship Criteria](#)
4. [Desire And Grow Rich tm](#)
5. [Your Secret To Success](#)
6. [Your New Life](#)
7. [Change Your Neighborhood](#)
8. [Change Your Car](#)
9. [Change Your Name](#)
0. [Change Your Image](#)
1. [A Princely Image](#)
2. [Even Cinderella Had A Makeover](#)

3. [Change What You Do With Your Time](#)
4. [Project That You Are ‘A Catch!’—
Body Language And Attitude](#)
5. [Be A Powerflirt](#)

Part II

The Rich

6. [Who Are The Rich?](#)
7. [The Rich And Your Money](#)
8. [Rich Class Distinctions](#)
9. [Class And Manners](#)

Part III

Strategies To Meet The Rich

10. [Where To Find RMs](#)
11. [Jobs To Meet The Rich And Super Rich](#)
12. [Meet The Rich For Free](#)
13. [Meet The Rich Socially](#)
14. [Crash Parties](#)
15. [Widowed Or Divorced RMs – Obituaries & Public Records](#)
16. [Online Dating Tips To Meet The Rich – Mobile Apps & Websites](#)
17. [Upscale Matchmakers And Rich Singles Clubs](#)
18. [Meet A Specific RM—Without the RM Knowing You Did It on Purpose](#)
19. [Meet An RM Who Is With A Date](#)

0. [Gimmicks To Meet The Rich](#)
1. [Audacious First Conversation With An RM—What To Say](#)
2. [Refuse To Talk Like A Loser—What NOT To Say](#)

Part IV

Relationships With The Rich

3. [Romantically Available Rich](#)
4. [Sugar Daddies-Sugar Mamas](#)
5. [Saccharine Mamas And Daddies](#)
6. [The G Word](#)
7. [Is Your RM For Real?](#)
8. [Rich Sex® The Sexual Dynamics Of](#)

Money

9. Kinky Sex
0. The Love Dynamics Of Money
1. Getting An RM's Money Into You
2. How To Love The Rich And Win
3. Getting An RM Hooked On You
4. An RM's Domestic Staff,
Employees, And Associates
5. Ex-Spouses And Children
6. How To Handle Trouble in RM City

Part V

Marriage Strategies

7. Who Marries the Rich?
8. Mixed Marriages
9. Why Marry?

10. [Sex, Love, And Money—The Dynamics Of Marriage](#)
11. [Marriage Strategy 1 – Romantic Test Trip](#)
12. [Marriage Strategy 2 – Live Together](#)
13. [Marriage Strategy 3 – Isolate Your Relationship](#)
14. [Marriage Strategy 4 – Competition](#)
15. [Marriage Strategy 5 – Propose](#)
16. [Marriage Strategy 6 – Deadline](#)
17. [Marriage Strategy 7 – Pregnancy](#)
18. [Marriage Strategy 8 – Marry Secretly](#)
19. [Pre/Post Nuptial Agreements](#)
20. [Reasons **NOT** To Marry The Rich](#)
21. [Settle For Less To Get **MORE**](#)
22. [Classy Endings](#)

Part VI

The Magical Power Of Inner Richness

63. [Inner Richness—A Secret Power](#)

64. [Inner Richness Power Of Faith](#)

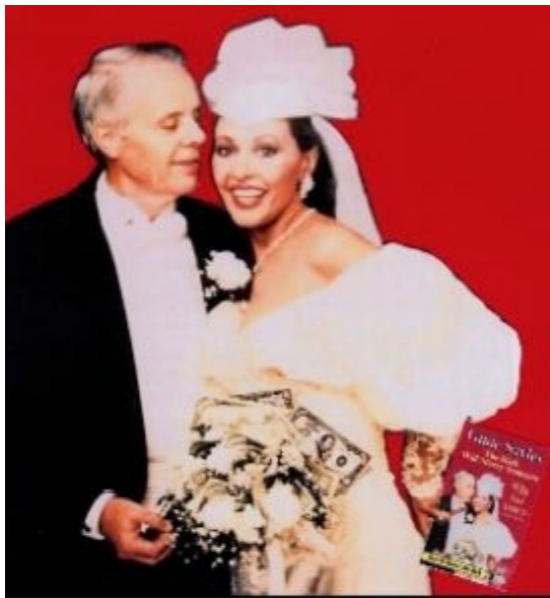
65. [Inner Richness Power Of Giving](#)

66. [Inner Richness Power Of](#)

[Releasing Grievances](#)

67. [Noblesse Obligée](#)

PREFACE: THE SOCIAL IMPACT OF THIS BOOK



Sherman Studios
Photo Copyright © 1990 Ginle Sayles

This light-hearted promotional photograph of Reed and Ginie Sayles was **‘the shot seen around the world’** because this photo shot was published in newspapers, magazines, and on television shows, worldwide.

When this book was first released, Ginie and Reed Sayles were instant Pop Culture Personalities and very popular throughout Media, worldwide.

Ginie’s viewpoints were original to her own thinking and so different from anyone else that she ignited a firestorm of controversy—and she started a whole industry on the subject, including:

This book was optioned for a movie.

Celebrities had private consultations with Ginie

The Media labeled Ginie as The Marry Rich Consultant—a label that has stuck and is now one of her trademark titles

Radio stations had Marry Rich opinion polls

Ginie's Chapter Titles about Sugar Daddies/Mamas inspired other authors to write books on the subject; and when Ginie was labeled a Gold Digger on television, another set of authors were inspired to write about Gold Diggers.

Networks produced live shows

with women vying to marry rich men on television. When asked how she feels about the authors who cropped up on her subjects, Ginie generously said, “I am honored that I inspired so many authors and I especially appreciate those who have graciously credited me or quoted me in their books. It speaks to how fine they are.”

Ginie’s “Gold Diggers™”

(sketches by Ginie that are in this book as Ginie’ were discussed on a national talk show where Ginie & Reed were guests—and some of them are illustrated in this edition of the book.

Surprisingly, new immigrants to America were requested to read this book as part of American culture; and

one of Ginie's sequel books was required reading in one college and also in a different university business class

Ginie loved feeling like a 'character' in a novel by talented author Lucy Broadbent when Lucy wrote her main character using this book.

Ginie and Reed Sayles were "twice" offered a Reality Show; but they said "Thanks, but no thanks!" When asked why, Reed replied, "How many marriages survive reality shows?"

Ginie agreed with him and added, "We value our intimacy too much to make it a peep show, which most reality shows are. *Our marriage* is our number one priority."

The loss of anonymity meant a

loss of privacy that felt invasive. And much of the non-stop media coverage required ongoing travel to and from television shows.

For the next several years, Reed and Ginie Sayles politely declined media and found solace in privacy. They both appreciate all interest the media had during a long sixteen-year stretch; but now the Sayles' enjoy their private life together. From time to time, they accept show invitations but they are very selective.

FOREWORD

BY REED SAYLES

“Ginie is the only woman I have ever loved. I wish I had been at her high school graduation and married her on the spot.”—

Reed Sayles

When a man goes through three failed marriages, as I did, it's pretty much a given that I'd probably let a great

deal of time and thought pass before considering marriage again.

Well, that would be true in most cases, but I didn't expect to meet Ginie, either.

Yes, just two days after my divorce on October 20th, I married Ginie on October 22nd. And I can honestly say that two days is the shortest divorce period I've ever had; but there has never been as much love in a marriage as ours and I wanted to jump right into what I felt was waiting for me.

I have been asked several times on national television if I knew Ginie was a gold digger in the beginning, or what I thought about her wanting my money. Yes, I knew, and I respected her

honesty. I like her straightforwardness about money. And when you fall in love with someone, like I did with Ginie, money only plays a secondary and supportive role to having what you want—and I wanted Ginie.

One reason I encouraged Ginie to teach *How To Marry The Rich* is because I know that many people who have money are so single-minded that they don't know their way around in a relationship. They need a mate who understands money and understands them. Ginie teaches how to make a relationship work to the greater happiness of both of them. As Ginie has said, a gold digger is the perfect mate to the gold owner. They speak the same

language.

As a matter of fact, in the early part of our dating, I even used my money just to entice her away from other wealthy men she was involved with.

In the past, I spent money in relationships because I felt guilty that I was an absent father, or because I was an unfaithful husband, or because I didn't love someone and felt obligated since I had let them down. I have thought that I had to "appear" to be the good guy. In this marriage, none of that exists and I feel good that the money I spend on Ginie expresses my love for her.

I'm proud of my wife. People think I married her because she's beautiful and vivacious. Yes, I like all

that about her. Naturally, I think she's the most beautiful woman in the world. But she is also very kind and helps people in ways that no one knows about. She is nurturing and sincere.

Ginie has courage and will think what she thinks in spite of pressure from others. And she doesn't judge you for what you may think. And, incidentally, she stuck by me when the oil business went down and brought some harder times.

And then, I love the excitement and whirlwind life I've lived since I've known Ginie. She's intelligent and ambitious. Those are qualities I admire in anybody—man or woman.

People are also surprised to find

that Ginie and I have been together twenty-four (24) hours a day since we married. We don't expect other people to live that way—they may have jobs that require different timetables or they may like their space; but we like being together.

Yes, this is the twenty-ninth (29th) year I have enjoyed a beautiful marriage that has meant everything to me.

If there is anything I could change it would be that I wish I could have been at Ginie's high school graduation and married her on the spot! Ginie Sayles is truly the only woman I have ever loved. That's what I get out of the relationship.

—Reed

Sayles

Reed Sayles was born into a wealthy family and he became a millionaire in his own right in the oil business. Not unusual in the oil industry, finances can go up and down: Reed has experienced both and Ginie has stuck by him during some very hard times.

INTRODUCTION:

THIS IS GINIE SAYLES

“My Role Model was Queen Esther of the Bible.”—Ginie Sayles

I was born and grew up in a small West Texas town. Until I was about nine years old, our entire family of four—

Mom, Dad, my older brother, Lefty Morris, and I—lived in a very small, one-bedroom plank house on a dirt road.

I have no complaints. My mother, who had a 5th grade education, kept everything spotless and my father, who completed 8th grade and attended 9th grade, kept our bills paid on time.

Mother and Dad wisely lived within their means; so during those years, we did not have a telephone or television or any luxuries. We did not go to restaurants because that was a luxury.

We ate very simple, unsophisticated foods at home, most often, red beans and cornbread with sliced tomatoes and onions, all of which I still love—and dietitians praise their

nutritional value.

Especially vivid in my mind is a summer when a girl invited me to go swimming at the country club. At noon, she said, “Let’s have fried shrimp in the clubhouse and charge it to my daddy.”

Now, I do not care how intelligent you are, you cannot know something if you have not been exposed to it; and I had never had shrimp and knew nothing about fried shrimp or that it is a casual food.

I agreed to the fried shrimp, but I wondered, “What is fried shrimp? What will it look like? How will it taste?” and I was worried that I would not know what silverware to use.

At that point, I realized you can

only know something if you have been exposed to it—and some experiences you can only be exposed to if you can afford to pay for it. Experiences that were ordinary to other people were out of reach for me.

So, the only difference between the Rich and me was *a gap of experiences* —experiences that could only be had if I had the money to buy those experiences. Since my parents did not have the money to buy those experiences for me—which meant the gap would get increasingly wider as I got older.

Dating Rich Boys Became

My Educational System

So, when I began dating, it was not that I liked Rich boys any better than poor boys. I definitely did not. But Rich boys held the key to experiences that were out of my reach unless I had a date who would pay for the experience for both of us.

Although I dated poor boys, dating boys with money became an **Educational System** for me—a way for me to learn from experiences I could not afford otherwise. It was an Educational System for me to close the gap between the Rich and me. Every time I had a date with a wealthy boy, I always suggested we go somewhere, eat somewhere, or do

something that I knew I could not afford. This could be anything from concerts, expensive restaurants, horseback riding, sailing or any other event or activity I had never known.

In restaurants, I would point out something new and say, “I have never had this. I wonder what it is like” and my date, who was usually familiar with it would explain and when the order came, he would show me what to do and seemed to enjoy teaching me. Through Rich boys I dated, I learned the ways to eat French escargot, Chinese food, Italian spaghetti with a large spoon and fork, whole artichoke leaf-by-leaf and then the heart, and various seafood as well as more sophisticated menu items.

As I matured and dated wealthy men, they became not only my Educational System for experience enrichment; they also became my Mentors and Role Models for business and financial success.

I have been married three times. There was absolutely no money in one case. After that, I went back to college as a divorced mother on welfare and a student loan. Laws were so archaic for women, even in a modern era, that a woman could not get a loan unless her husband signed for it, even if they were separated and in the process of getting a divorce.

Of course, a husband being sued for divorce is not amenable to giving a

wife who is divorcing him permission to get a loan. But once my divorce was final, I was able to get my loan, but I also needed welfare because my baby's father was unable to pay child support; and welfare helped cover babysitting cost for my child. My parents helped as best they could and I appreciate it still.

My baby girl was 3 months old when I went back to college and 2 years old when I was graduated. My adorable little daughter was a handful; but she was also an emotional anchor for me while I earned a degree in English and speech.

On graduation day, while waiting for my name to be called, I thought that if I ever had independent disposable

income, I would create a scholarship for single parents. Little did I know that THIS BOOK would be the key. When Berkley Books (Penguin-Putnam) asked me to write this book, I later assigned my author's royalty to create The Ginie Sayles Scholarship For Single Parents.

After graduation from college, my careers included teaching school, primarily high school senior English, then I handled public relations for a major Opera company and I was Editor of its Opera magazine. Later, I became a licensed Stockbroker (New York Stock Exchange National Association of Security Dealers/now known as the Financial Industry Regulatory Authority) and passed a very difficult Series 7

Exam (100).

For a period of time, I stopped dating and concentrated on motherhood, on careers, and on an intense spiritual life.

When I resumed dating, I had to relearn a lot of dating and relationship skills I had set-aside during those years. Naturally, my core interest in Rich men kicked into gear.

I must confess that I believe men in general are wonderful—rich or poor—and I do not say that to be gracious. I mean it. I think men of any financial caliber can be wonderful; but, as I once said on television, it is easier for their relationship with me if they have money.

Once I was actively dating again,

I naturally gravitated back into my old habit of seeking and dating rich men. When my daughter and I were living in the Park Cities in Dallas, Texas, where she attended the Highland Park school system, I met and dated a number of wealthy men.

My Husband's Background

My husband, Reed, had already grown up in another West Texas community, as I had; but he grew up under completely different circumstances.

Reed's pedigree stretches all the way back to Roger Williams, founder of Rhode Island, whose daughter, Mary,

married John Sayles—and to John & Abigail Williams Sergeant, founder of Stockbridge, MA.

The descendent of both families, also named John Sayles, came to Texas and was a founding professor of Baylor Law School. Reed has a 1st Edition 1858 book written by his great-great grandfather, John Sayles, Atty.

John and his son, Henry Sayles Sr., also a lawyer, were also among the founding families of Reed's hometown.

You know what being a founder means, don't you? It means that whoever gets there first (founder) gets all the real estate!

Reed's grandfather, Henry Sayles Jr had two ranches in Texas and one

ranch in Australia, plus oil and gas holdings. He was a very wealthy man, indeed.

Reed's father, who went to Stanford University, kept the Sayles wealth intact, so Reed had an impressive pedigree—Reed was Old Money.

So different from me, Reed grew up in country club life, playing golf and driving luxury cars, even as a teenager. He attended Sewanee, a private, upper-class college in the South, took cruises, and picked up the family business. Eventually, though, he launched out on his own with family backing and connections, and became a millionaire himself, in the oil business.

At the time I met Reed, if I had not

dated Rich men, the gap of experiences between us could have been too great for us to have a meeting of the minds.

But because I had educated myself to his lifestyle through Rich men I had dated, we brought the interest of our divergent backgrounds together successfully to build a happy marriage.

Reed—like all how-powered moneymen I have known—was undaunted by my clearly expensive nature. **Money is part of what a person has to give in a relationship and to give money that is valued is to give of oneself.**

Our Experiences on Talk

Shows

When Reed and I are on talk shows, an audience gets a thin slice of our personalities. It is not long enough for them to know some of the human sides of who we are.

For instance, on one national talk show, I was asked if I would leave Reed if someone else came along with more money. I said no and that I'd had that opportunity. And I did, when Reed and I were living together the three months while waiting for his divorce to be final.

And the first time we were on *Oprah*, Reed talked enthusiastically about our sex life. I shared that he buys me panties and has love messages

monogrammed on them. Reed has sweet, fun messages monogrammed on the panties, including “Ginie, My Million Dollar Baby” and “I love you,” and so on. We call them “Brief Messages™” and “Love Briefs™.”

I even have a collection of Talk Show Panties Reed gave me for some of the shows, worn only once. Each pair has the name of the talk show and the date we were guests on it. I guess in time they may be Collector’s Panties!

PART I



YOU

1

You Are Wonderful

*“You are more of a winner
than you may feel at times.”*

—Ginie Sayles

**The Rich will marry someone, why
not ME?**™ - Ginie Sayles



Copyright © 1996, 2011 Ginie Sayles
ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

You are wonderful! Oh, I know you may feel frightened and ineffective at times. You may feel frustrated about mistakes you think you

have made.

But look at you!—You are still hanging in here, trying. That means you are having faith in you, even if you do not realize it.

That is why you are reading this book. You care about your life. You care about upgrading your life. Successful people are the ones who read books about success more than anyone else.

Losers do not read life-improvement, self-improvement books...that is why they are losers. They do not educate themselves to greater success or personal fulfillment.

Just by reading this book, you are indicating that you are more of a winner than you may feel at this moment.

The Power Of You

You are everything you have to work with. You are the stuff of which all your dreams are made. There really is no other you. You do not want to change the basic core of you. That is precious. That is your jewel of existence.

Ultimately it is that core of you that will pay off, because it is unique. As I said, we do not want to change that. We want to enhance it. We want to mine it, refine it, upgrade it, polish it, package it, and market it for the relationships you want.

The First Basic Lesson For Marrying The Rich

Learn to finesse two elements into
your personality:

**What You Have In
Common With The Rich
How Your Are Different
From The Rich**

Why? Because what you **have in common** with a Rich Mate (RM) is the way you **build rapport**.

At the same time, the **ways that you are different** from your RM is what **fascinates**.

You want to **play off both traits** in order to build a relationship that has enough balance and interest that it will end in marriage. You must accentuate **BOTH** qualities.

What You Have In Common

If you are too different, an RM will not be able to relate to you enough to communicate with you, much less to develop rapport with you.

So, one important key to meeting and socializing with RMs is to **get as much in common with the Rich as possible**. And being Mercenary is one thing you already have in common with

the Rich!

How You Are Different

If, however, you have too much in common with an RM, you will be boring to the RM. Some people who were brought up with money discover they have difficulty marrying someone of their own social and financial level; and it is because they have too much in common with RMs in their world.

So if you share a background of money with an RM, find ways to be 'different' enough from what is expected to create an interesting relationship.

Does Your Age Matter?

The good news is that age is not a deciding factor. If you are a young man who is buff, that is great; but equally as great is an older man with a touch of elegance.

The same is true for women. Most RMs who actively pursue young women are either young, themselves, or they are game-players with an ego they keep propped up by having sex with young women.

But most older male RMs who have been married and had children want a woman within their age range. One male RM in his 50s told me he will

not date a woman younger than 40 and that 40 barely makes the grade for him. He said he has daughters in their 20s and he does not want to feel like a babysitter and he does not relate to the interests of a woman his daughter's ages.

Yes, there are RMs who marry much younger men or women; and that is fine, too; but so much is made in the media about age differences that people think it is the norm. It is not the norm. Most women and men RMs want a marriage mate they can relate to and who fits in comfortably with their peers.

I have clients in their 60s who have married real winner RMs. Age is not the final factor. How you take care of yourself and a healthy view of

relationships and life are key.

So—Congratulations for knowing that you deserve the best that money can provide in this life—including the warm, generous love of a Rich Mate.

This book is designed for you, to tell you how to project the dynamic of self—sex, love, and money—through the way you package yourself, project your personality, and express yourself in relation to money.

Whether or not you have a background of money—for the sake of thoroughness—I am presuming that you are not and have never been Rich.

Do not worry, *Marrying The Rich* is something that can be learned. Read this book many times. It contains so

much information you cannot possibly remember it all the first time. Every time you read it, you will discover something has new meaning to you. Re-read certain portions over and over until you learn them.

And do approach this subject with a sense of “fun” no matter how serious you are about it. Fun creates happy memories and makes life richer and fuller.

Basic Terminology In This Book

Let's look at two basic terms I use throughout this book:

—RM

—Mercenary

RM

An RM is a Rich Mate. An RM can be a Rich Mate of either sex, and, an RM is someone you date with a possibility of marriage. Billionaires have exploded onto the world scene over the past few decades; and combined with increasing numbers of millionaires, you can see the pickings are not as slim as some would have you believe.

Not all of the world's millionaires and billionaires—RMs—

are single; but there are still enough millionaire/billionaire RMs who *are* single, to make your hunt worthwhile.

And, besides, through divorces, many RMs keep getting recycled!

Mercenary

People often think being mercenary means selling out for money. It can, I suppose, if you give up being you. But in this book, being **mercenary means doing whatever you would normally do and being sure you are valued for it.**

In relationships, when you spend your emotion, time, and efforts with one person over another, you have lost the

potential of some other relationship working, perhaps better than this one. If this relationship does not work out, then you should have something to show for it.

Trust? Love? Time? Don't those qualities have a value? Yes, and there should be **tangible proof that your qualities of trust, love, and time that you are giving in the relationship are valued.**

Translate your relationship skills into dollars and cents terms for a minute. After all we put a dollar and cents value on the skills and time we give in our profession. You may consider it priceless—which means you should be receiving even more for what you give.

Both men and women already know that relationships take effort and time. And, because you care, it costs you a great deal in the long run. Answer the following:

1. What do you have to show for your time and effort?
2. Place a monetary value on what you give in a relationship, just as you would on a job.
3. Now, ask yourself if you are getting that much out of your relationships?

Be a realist. Even if you do not marry the Rich, you can better protect yourself in relationships if you place some monetary or lifestyle expectations and rewards for the qualities you bring into a relationship.

One woman who benefited from my *How To Marry The Rich* seminar explained that a certain man often asked her to lunch and let her pay or “forgot“ to bring his wallet when it was his turn to pay (and, of all things, would even show her his empty pockets).

She later discovered he was paying for dinner dates with another woman; whereas, he had never taken her

to dinner or anywhere but to lunch.

"You are subsidizing his dinner date," I said to her. "The money he saves by your paying for his lunch enables him to take her out to dinner. This may sound cruel, but you must know the truth. He cares enough for her to pay her way. You care enough for him to pay his. **The person who gives the more cares more.**"

After she took my seminar, she let him take her to lunch as usual the next week. And, as usual, she was not surprised when he rummaged through his pockets, saying he forgot his wallet. She smiled at him and said it did not matter and she encouraged him to order a sizeable meal, and she did, too. Then she

excused herself to make a telephone call and left him sitting in the restaurant with the check—and no wallet! Hooray for her!

What It Means If You Are Not Mercenary

People who are not mercenary in a relationship are not superior. **By not being mercenary, they have placed a value on themselves, anyway.** They have placed a value on how they can be treated in a relationship. Whether they like it or not, they have said that it does not cost anything to be with them, that

they have a **zero dollar value**.

Ask yourself how many people you know who come out of a relationship feeling cheated? You just do not feel AS cheated if your bank account says you were smart. Mercenary, then, means you are your own best friend.

The Rich Are Very Mercenary

Most wealthy men and women prefer a relationship with an *invisible* price tag on it. The operative word is 'invisible' where relationships are concerned so that it does not seem commercial.

Your invisible price tag comes in the form of expectations—expensive places and events for the RM to take you and nice gifts for special occasions. A person whose companionship can be had without any demands or expectations will not be valued.

And, interestingly enough, when an RM proposes marriage, he is the one who brings up his money, himself, as one of the reasons a woman should consider marrying him. He is aware that it is an asset; and, frankly, understands value for value of relationships in dollars and cents terms.

When an oil man in Dallas asked me to marry him, he added an incentive when he said, “Ginie, I can pay for your

daughter's college education." I did not marry him (Reed was already in the picture) but it makes clear that the Rich know that money is part of what they have to give.

A wealthy woman made it clear to a man that if they married, she would help his career and she did. She knew what she wanted and she knew what he wanted and she had the money to help them both get what they wanted.

The Rich expect to pay, *even indirectly*. That is why the Rich spend large sums of money for **expensive club memberships—to buy the friends and associates that cost the most to have.**

They could also have the same mansion built in a poor part of town and have lower property taxes, but most of them do not do that. Most of the Rich build their houses in posh areas to be with other Rich people. **They live in Rich neighborhoods—to buy the neighbors that cost the most to have.**

Oh yes, the Rich may complain about gold diggers or mercenaries, but they, themselves, are as mercenary as any gold digger. You seldom see them socializing with people who are not Rich, do you?

YOU Make It Happen— YOU Are The Missing Ingredient

My book is like a math book or a grammar book. It can help you only if you apply it. You are the key ingredient. You are the only one who can follow-through on applicable information. There is a wonderful saying, “If it’s to be, it’s up to me.”

Because of the many, unpredictable variables, no book can guarantee an outcome in your life; but it can increase your success potential if you study and utilize methods given as they apply to your life.

Say this aloud, right now: “I, (your name), now accept full and total responsibility for all my relationships—past, present, and future.” There is real power in saying this and often.

Accept full and total responsibility for all your relationships—past, present, and future—even if you feel you were victimized in the past.

You are not accepting responsibility for the way the other person chose to treat you. You are accepting responsibility for choosing to allow such treatment. By facing and accepting responsibility for all your relationships, you are more aware of your power, your choices and from now on, choose only what is in your best and

healthiest and safest interest.

Safety is your number one priority at all times: That includes a reasonable mental, physical, emotional safety. TAKE NO CHANCES that could endanger your safety in any way. Be sure the person works where he or she says and has the position the person claims to have before getting involved in romantic relationships with them.

Do not pursue any how-to advice of any how-to book, CDs, or DVDs, blogs, ebooks or other digital downloads, including these Marry Rich guidelines or goals if you are not willing to accept full and total responsibility for any eventuality or outcome, and to provide at all times

for your own personal safety.

This book—and any book—cannot possibly foresee every eventuality and no author can be with you when you make decisions. You must accept responsibility for your own behavior.

One woman sought a wealthy mate through the Internet. She connected with a man in another country who claimed to be rich. When he suggested they marry, she moved to his country and married him.

Not only did he not have any money, he was abusive and insisted she work and make their money. It was not easy to extricate herself from this situation, and it took a few years; but

eventually, she escaped the situation and got back to her home country, having learned the hardest way possible that she was responsible for making a choice that put her in danger. **Your Number One Responsibility Is Your Personal Safety As You Pursue Any Goal.**

No matter what you read or learn from any source; **you choose** how you will utilize the information. For example, two men were educated at Harvard; however one Harvard graduate became President of the United States, John F. Kennedy; whereas another Harvard graduate became the terrorist Unabomber, Theodore Kaczynski.

Information is education; but education does not make your choices

for you. You are the only one who can make it happen – AND – you are the only one responsible for your choices.

Choosing To Marry The Rich

My Goal: If you do not marry the Rich, that is fine; but I want it to be “your choice”—because you decide not to marry someone with money—but not because you felt outclassed, inferior or never knew how to handle relationships with Rich suitors or to pursue Rich mates.

And by learning this information,

whether or not you marry the Rich, you win!—because you emerge a more confident person, knowing you can make your own choices in life, feeling comfortable with yourself, and fully feeling **how wonderful I already know you are!**

2

Your Dreams

“You are not trying to ‘rip off’ an RM. You are offering an exciting relationship to an RM if the RM is worthy of you.

It is a fair exchange.”

—Ginie Sayles

Those of you who attended my Marry Rich seminars and have read my earlier editions of this book know that I have always had you start by examining *your dreams*.

Start by examining your dream lifestyle and then be true to your dream. Your best friend may spin visions of jetting to the Riviera, lounging

on a yacht off Monte Carlo, and wearing rare jewels to place casino bets.

You, on the other hand, may want a pretty two-story house on the nicest street in a small town and a country club membership.

Leave your friend's dream to your friend no matter how glamorous it may sound—and you pursue your dream. You each want different financial lifestyles. One lifestyle is not superior to the other. One is simply you.

If you attained your friend's dream and you were jetting to the Riviera, you would have a lonely, dissatisfied feeling of wanting roots and a serene life—the way your dream depicts.

Be true to your dream. Your

dream can get you where you want to be if you are true to it.

Translate your dream into a financial range. Spotlight the lifestyle your dream reveals that you want. Think about it.

How much does your dream cost?

—Half a million to a million? This may seem on the lower end of the totem pole; but it is just as valid if it reflects your dream.

—One to ten million dollars?

—Twenty-five to a hundred million dollars?

—Five hundred to eight hundred million dollars?

Do not be scared of the word "billion." It is commonplace these days; and the word "trillion" is spoken with ease to those who talk money. Trillionaire RMs are clearly on the horizon now.

Again, what does your dream cost? Remember, you may be just as content and fulfilled with a comfortable one to five million dollar RM as others would be with a billion dollar RM. Stay true to your dream when counting the cost.

Put it all together. Now,

synthesize your dream and your dollar range. This is your goal of money and marriage.

Crystallize in your mind, right now, how Rich is Rich enough for you. Keep that figure to yourself, but think of it often. Be sure the number is a reflection of your real dreams of money and marriage.

Summarize your dream: Write a sentence that sums up your dream lifestyle in a dollar range, along with your marriage style.

For example:

—Maybe your dream lifestyle is a financially comfortable, family-

oriented marriage and lifestyle in the range of a quarter of a million dollars to one or two million dollars.

—Or your dream lifestyle is a marriage that is mutually supportive of separate careers (or the careers may be the same) with financial freedom to fulfill your careers, which could range between half a million dollars to twenty million dollars.

—Perhaps your dream lifestyle is a socially based marriage with largesse to enjoy high society in a range of fifty million dollars to five hundred million (half a billion) dollars.

—Maybe your dream lifestyle is a marriage of global grandeur, unlimited luxury and camaraderie with world leaders in the context reserved for billionaires.

Experience Your Dream

Mentally: Close your eyes and think of a time when you experienced wealth around you. This reinforces your comfort with money.

It may have been on a tour in a historical mansion. It may have been when you ran an errand for someone that took you into a beautiful house. It may have been walking through a fine hotel lobby.

One young man worked as a parking valet for a private soiree at the home of a multi-millionaire. One car he parked was a Maserati and he fell in love with it and everything it represented to him. He became a car salesman for it, later a dealer and then a dealer of multiple brands, becoming very wealthy—all because of the dream that filled his heart when he was parking cars.

A woman in California told me that when she was in high school, she was on a committee for the school paper and it met in the home of one of her wealthy classmates. When she entered the mansion with her friends, the first thing that caught her eye was a beautiful,

shiny silver tea service in the parlor. At that moment, she knew she wanted a future family life that looked and felt like that very moment of seeing the silver tea set. A few years later, she married a wealthy man and she does, indeed, have a mansion with a beautiful tea service in the parlor.

You have had moments that sum up a dream lifestyle for you. Whatever it was, it meant money to you and you felt a desire to live that way.

Remember every single detail in your mind that you can.

—What was the color of the walls? Did it have wallpaper?

—What fabric of curtains?

- The pattern of the rug?
- The doorways, doorknobs
- Art
- Furnishings
- Was there a fragrance?
- A feel in the atmosphere?

Go ahead, relive it. Put yourself in the situation as **owning** it all. Now, write down every description. Include scents, tastes, textures, sounds, lights.

A Dream Board

A Dream Board keeps some people focused. If you do create a Dream Board, cut out pictures in magazines that represent your TRUE dreams (I say true dreams because you

do not want to get distracted by scenes that ‘look good’ but do not really represent your soul-dream) and paste them on your Dream Board with a picture of you in the middle.

These processes of visualization keep you on-track toward your goals.

3

Your Relationship Criteria

*“Dating Criteria and
Marriage Criteria are not the
same.”*

—Ginie Sayles

If you REALLY want to marry the Rich and soon, create **two lists** of Criteria.

DATING CRITERIA: Your ONLY criteria for dating material is that the person is:

—Rich

—Has Decent Manners

You do not care how old the person is or what the person looks like. You date absolutely everyone who is Rich and has decent manners.

It is hard to live with a boorish, uncouth person, even if the person has money; and since people end up marrying people they date, make sure that all your dates at least have decent manners as well as money.

Once you are dating RMs who fit your ‘dating criteria,’ you zero in on which of those RMs meet your ‘marriage criteria.’

MARRIAGE CRITERIA:

Marriage Criteria is based on

how an RM treats YOU.

The RMs from your dating criteria already have money and decent manners. Now you zero in on

marriage quality.

What are the **two** most important marriage qualities an RM **must have** in the way the RM treats you? For me, the only two traits were:

1. Kind
2. Generous

A Wish List Is A Death List

Why only two traits? Because people who have a 'list' of traits they want in a mate are not ready for marriage and they have a hard time getting married.

These people feel desperately

lonely and desperately want marriage; but they hide their fear of being hurt behind a list of traits they want in a mate.

But they have created a ‘Wish List’ of traits that is really a ‘Death List’ that execute any real relationships before they have a chance to ‘jell.’

Marriage is a daily negotiating of uncharted waters in a relationship.

One woman told me she would only marry:

a vegetarian

nonsmoker – this may be important for health reasons; but stay open

nondrinker

deeply religious

never been married
has no children
assets of nothing less than 500
million dollars

She died a few years ago and had never married, although she had dated wealthy men. She killed her own love life with her death list.

A man told me he would only marry a woman who is:

Good looking
Loyal
Non-argumentative

Keep in mind that good looking, loyal and non-argumentative are traits

you can find in a Cocker Spaniel. He needed to expand his love abilities.

Love Is An Emotional Muscle

"Now" is the **ONLY** time we have to love. And, on some level, we choose to love a person. I have said that **love is an emotional muscle—exercise it. The more you love, the more you CAN love.**

How do you ‘exercise’ your emotional muscle of Love? Simple: ***Love Easily.*** By that I mean ‘practice loving’ the people you are with to some extent. How do you do that? You fully

enjoy the person who is with you NOW.

I tend to love the person I am with at the moment. Just a personal quirk that has reaped nice relationships.

Practice loving. Learn to Love often and to love easily.

One BBC host asked me if my husband had ever complained about what I do. I answered, “Yes, once,” and explained that on a television show, I made the comment that I tend to love the man I am with at the time; and after the show, Reed angrily said to me, “I will appreciate it if you do not advertise on my time!”

I did not think I was advertising, just sharing my love nature, but for my husband’s sake, I have never said it

again on a show. My point is that having an ‘Open’ Love Nature is one that keeps you in the Flow of Love, both receiving and giving it. And an Open Love Nature is exactly that – Open to people in the moment, Open to Now.

Open Yourself Up To “Discover” Love, Not To Define It

Tell yourself you don’t know what you want in a mate beyond your basic Daring and Marriage Criteria. Open yourself up to “discover” what you want.

Take each person you date on his or her own merits (as long as the person meets your Dating Criteria.

Don't box yourself in beyond that. If a person meets the basic Dating Criteria, love something about that person, instead of judging what is wrong with the person. You do not have to marry anyone; but if someone likes you, there is something you can like back.

No Pining: A major rule—you only want RMs who want you. If an RM does not want you, there is obviously something wrong with that RM—not with you. You have too much personal pride to want anyone who does not want you. Do not waste your time, energy, or

interest. Move on, move on, move on.

When you want RMs who want you and when you love RMs who love you and who are good to you, life is beautiful.

Desire and Grow
Rich TM

“You only rise as high in life as your Comfort Level. Your Desire System is the power to elevate your Comfort Level.”

—Ginie Sayles

Don't worry. . . you already have what it takes to Marry the Rich. And that is your **Desire System**. Your Desire System is the most important key to Marrying the Rich. Your Desire System is the engine that runs the entire process of achieving goals—from start to finish.

For those religious systems who wish to kill desire and consider it the cause of evil; I respectfully point out that it is their desire to eliminate desire that motivates them. They desire to do good. Desire is not evil as long as what you

desire hurts no one, including yourself.
And desire is noble if it helps others.

Desire is motivation and without desire to motivate individuals we would still be living in caves. There would be no progress without desire. No cars invented, no airplanes invented, no space travel invented, no educational system created. We would live in a void without desire. And, without sexual desire, there would be no posterity.

There are people who will tell you that if you want to achieve a goal, you must have determination. Others will say that you must have persistence.

But I am here to say, “No, determination is not the key to achieving a goal.” And I am here to say, “No,

persistence is not the key to achieving a goal.”

There is only one key to achieving a goal and that is Desire. If you desire something enough, you will automatically persist with determination but you will never think of it that way; because it will be a natural reflex of Desire.

Desire will get you where you want to go, All you have to do is to **feed** your Desire System, **nurture** your Desire System, **cherish** and **cultivate** your Desire System, until it motivates everything you do, every choice you make on the tiniest level.

You Only Rise As High As Your Comfort Level

You only rise as high in life as your comfort level; so begin elevating your comfort level with price-levels that are common to the Rich. You do this through a method I refer to as Desire Shopping. Desire Shopping will cultivate and nurture your Desire System.

Begin by making a list of all the places in your city that are known for their opulence where you can go for little or no money:

The most expensive clothing stores

Fine furniture stores
Interior design shops.
Art galleries
Art Museums
Sumptuous hotel lobbies
Gift shops
Fine international department
store chains that are known for
excellence, such as Neiman-
Marcus.

In cities there are often shopping centers that cater to the Rich, usually near or in the wealthy neighborhoods.

You go these places to acquaint yourself with the finest. You want to get used to having your body near the very best that money can buy.

You observe details.

You note how these places are different from the ordinary. You gather samples of the costliest perfumes and fragrances in the world. You study foods and coffees sold in the gourmet sections.

It is especially important to go anywhere that intimidates you. You are only intimidated because you are not familiar with this type of backdrop for your daily life.

By going these places, every day, for ninety days, you will become increasingly comfortable.

Intimidation fades as you gradually realize that all expensive objects in all these luxurious places are

inferior to you, no matter what they cost. They are a backdrop for your activities. And you deserve the best and insist on having it, even in this way, for the time being.

You now respect objects for their craftsmanship, not their cost. You refine your taste and learn to appreciate craftsmanship by touring museums and historical mansions.

If you see ads for fine estate auctions, go to the website, order the brochures if it is required and study them or study the online brochure if it is available. Go to the auctions, if you can. You do not have to buy anything.

Study websites (or the physical magazines if you prefer) such as **The**

**Robb Report, Architectural Digest® ,
Town & Country Magazine, and
Gourmet, as well as others.**

Try on clothing that costs at least \$1000—and more! You may have to practice just going to a shop for several days until you finally work up the courage to try the clothes on.

It is not the clothes that will be that much different, remember. It is the price that is different and whether or not you would ever spend that much money on clothing is insignificant. It is that you want to be able to; and you want to feel comfortable in it. That is your goal. **Do not skip this step.**

Study the expensive clothes on

your body in the fitting room mirror. Study the workmanship—the seams, the buttonholes, the quality of lining. Look at yourself, long and hard.

Feel how it feels. Feel the fabric and drink in every detail of the way you look and how you feel.

Learn the labels that have these prices.

Try on good jewelry—fine watches, rings, diamond necklaces. Ask for the most expensive.

Go to fine car show rooms. Get inside the luxury cars and be like a little sponge, soaking up the feeling of quality.

Treat yourself first class. Stop

treating yourself as if you are second-class in any way.

Even in ordinary ways, give yourself the best that you would give anyone else. If you have fine china or expensive towels and sheets that you only use for guests, pull them out and begin using them, yourself. No longer treat yourself as if you should use the cracked pottery.

If you have no fine china, buy yourself one plate, one cup, one saucer in fine china. Buy one crystal glass and a cloth napkin and use all of these every single day just for yourself. Very good pieces can often be bought for a song at junk stores, second-hand stores, and

some antique shops.

Buy yourself some small luxury item that represents the lifestyle you want. Yes, it may be a little expensive—but it is a symbol of the lifestyle you want. It can be a pen or a wallet or even a Rigaud candle that I have been told Prince Charles of England burns for the fragrance.

You may find yourself yearning for many of the items you see...yearning for a lifestyle that includes these luxuries.

Be glad. Be glad when you feel these intense, frustrated, unhappy yearnings. It means your Desire System is getting healthier, stronger. Your Desire System is making you uncomfortable

with your present condition. Your Desire System is insisting that you change your life in whatever way you HAVE to, in order to have what you want.

The Purposes of Desire Shopping are:

- To learn to be comfortable in the most expensive surroundings.
- To learn not to let people who work in these places intimidate you.
- To learn not to be intimidated by the cost and quality of luxury because all the luxurious objects are inferior to you.
- To develop your self-esteem by treating yourself better than you treat

anyone else.

—To fine-tune your taste to a discriminating awareness.

Most important of all, to whet your appetite for the finest until your Desire System demands it. And then....you can get it.

In all insignificant, everyday matters, CHOOSE to be as bodily close to the most expensive objects.

One simple exercise that seems strange —but DO IT ANYWAY—is that, even on the level of something as mundane as walking between two cars in the parking lot...or parking your own car in a parking lot, CHOOSE to walk between or park between the two nicest,

most expensive cars you see.

For instance, park your car between, say, a Cadillac and a Mercedes, rather than between a bashed-in clunker and a broken down pick-up (even though you may be driving a clunker yourself!).

It is this "choosing" on the tiniest level to position yourself, bodily, next to only the best that develops what the Rich consider "discriminating taste."

Discriminating Taste

Discriminating taste means that you are "aware" of quality, that you are aware of the best in life. By standing, walking, parking, just constantly positioning yourself, bodily, next to the

best, you are constantly reflecting a stronger sense of self-worth.

Once you feel comfortable with luxury and realize that **the most expensive objects in the world are inferior to you**; then your self-esteem will enter the same comfort-level and mental plane as the Rich.

5

*Your Secret To
Success*

*“The Secret to Success is the
word ‘Secret.’”*

—Ginie Sayles

The Secret To Success Is The Word “Secret”: That means your biggest ally for success is secrecy.

It is best if you do not let your friends and relatives know what your intentions are, or they may put it down, criticize, ridicule, or in some other way, try to interfere. And if you do not achieve a goal you have shared with them, they will never let you live it down.

Also, it is best if you do not pursue these goals under their scrutiny. In order to reach your goals, you must get out from under their noses and get out from under their opinions.

And in order to reach your goals, you **MUST** take charge of your own life and not live it to please anybody else. Honor this fine integrity of secrecy with yourself.

Make Hard Decisions:

Unfortunately; there are some rather brutal choices you may have to make in your life in order to achieve your dreams.

You may have to move to another city or town; you may have to change friends; and you may even have to limit your exposure to parents or relatives if they are holding you back.

Do not feel guilty and do not allow anyone to make you feel guilty

about making this choice. You will feel the pain of unfulfillment if you live life according to the dictates of other people. And they will NOT value you more for living your life the way they tell you to. In the long run, they WILL value you more for living your own life, your way.

Yes, be kind to your relatives and to your old friends. Tell them whatever you have to in order to be gracious; but stick with your decision to change the direction of your life, once you have determined it is what you really want.

If you think they will complain about your moving where they have no control over you; do not tell them you are moving until AFTER you do it. Simply find a new job in another city or

in another part of town. Then locate an apartment, and move!

Announce that you have already moved and taken another job. If they are upset, tell them that is why you did it without telling them, to keep from upsetting them. Sound sweet; but stick to your new plan.

And do be sure it is what you really, really want before you take these steps. Nothing could be worse than to cut ties (even if gently) and then find yourself desperately lonely and homesick for family, friends, and hometown.

It is important for you to know there WILL be lonely times in your pursuit of RMs; however, there will be

lonely times in your life even if you do not pursue RMs.

Be Undaunted By Critics Of Marrying The Rich: Do not be concerned by people who criticize someone who marries Rich as being mercenary. Remember, criteria exist for your critics, too. They criticize your values only because your values do not agree with theirs. Let their words be water off a duck's back. And you do not have to admit anything to anyone.

After all, you are seeking a mate for reasons that the mate has some control over. Many of your critics seek a mate for physical appearance—something a person has no genetic

control over. People have more control over how much money they have than how good looking they are.

Know Criticism For What It is:

When people criticize you, it has nothing to do with YOU—it has to do with THEM. Criticism reveals more about the person who is criticizing than it does about the person being criticized. It reveals that person's self-limitations and desire to restrict your life to their restrictions, their definitions—to control you. You are too smart for that!

Create A Schedule Of

Commitment To Action In The NOW:
In this book, I give a daily checklist that

can help you succeed.

After you finish reading this book:

Jot down the places you will go.

Note the changes you will make in yourself.

Put a time frame on each item.

Get on the Internet and start locating the places and people you will utilize to make the changes in your life that are required. This is your plan of action that can get results for an exciting, fun, active, more financially rewarding, and loving life.

New Friends. At some point, you will meet people with ‘friend-potential.’

And by friend potential, I mean that it is obvious they are ‘like minded’ because they date the Rich and have an inside edge to where the Rich are.

Once you are sure such people are ‘like minded’ and non-judgmental and non-competitive with you—once you are sure these people not only feel the same way; but that they are supportive of your interest in upscale dating, you can help each other out.

How? Well, make a fun agreement between you (or among you if it is more than one friend) that if you date an RM, you will try to set up your friend on a date with the Rich friend of your new RM—and your new friends will do the same for you.

It can be a great system. Be damn sure, though, that you are not opening the door for your new friend to take your RM. Be sure!

And you do not have to tell your new friends, anything. Learn where they go and go there; but keep your activities private...i.e. e. secret. It's smart survival!

6

Your New Life

*“Change 3 things—your environment—your image—what you do with your time—and your life **will** change!”*

—Ginie Sayles

Putting your dream into action means ‘updating’ your life. Anytime you want to update your life, all you have to do is to take control of these key elements:

Change your **Environment**

Change your **Image** in some way

Change what you do with your **Time**

Change these three and your life **will change. You are more in control than you think.** And changes juice up your life!!

If you do not make changes in these three ways, you will not feel anything new and different about your

life. And if you do not feel differently, you do not behave differently...and then, your life does not change.

But you **want** change and you **are ready** for change (evidenced by the fact that you are reading this book), and by taking proactive steps to change what you can control in your life – your neighborhood, your image, your time, et cetera – you create powerful changes in your life.

Answer these two questions:

How do you want people to see you?

How do you think people actually see you?

If there is a difference between

those two—and there usually is—then make the changes you need to make in order to reconcile your life with how you want people to see you.

There are two more benefits to change:

—Positive changes bring new excitement to your personality.

—Remember—birds of a feather DO flock together and one of the ways they recognize each other as ‘belonging’ is by their feather. These changes define your new life with added excitement to each day.

Excitement Is The Chemistry Of Love

Change creates excitement and excitement has been shown to be the "chemistry of love." People fall in love more during a change that creates a sense of excitement. This can be a change in weather or a change in lifestyle.

You automatically project a new sense of excitement about yourself from the changes you are making and this new excitement can attract love!

Changing your image changes your life. It is fun and it gets results. Changing your feather includes taking care of your body. Jog or walk in Rich neighborhoods and on their neighborhood jogging tracks.

Join an upscale YMCA (in a posh

neighborhood) and work out with weights. Go these places at different hours of the day—during DAYLIGHT HOURS ONLY—when the Rich who control their time go there. Do this for several weeks to see who comes around during certain hours. And yes, the Rich do support the Y in their neighborhoods.

—Wear bright work-out clothing that gets you noticed.

—Casually glance and smile at people. You can toss a "hi." Just be sure you keep going and stay casual.

—Learn to make quiet small talk with people who otherwise will go through their paces as if no one is in the room. What's the good of going if you do not find a way to interact.

—Whether outdoors or indoors, do not wear earplugs with an iPod. These are "isolation devices" that say, "Do not bother me. I am busy."

—Even though you are in a Rich neighborhood, always follow safety precautions for yourself. Carry a small container of mace, perhaps attached to your keychain (if it is allowed in your state), and do not EVER go off with someone you have just met because you think you have met someone Rich. You need to perform your due diligence, first, to be sure this person is safe. Safety is your first responsibility to yourself.

Change Your Neighborhood

*“Live where the Rich live,
even if it’s in an attic.”*

—Aristotle Onassis

One of the easiest places to meet RMs is in their neighborhoods. Living where the Rich live can totally change your life.

Many wealthy people have several homes; however, the Rich usually have a ‘primary’ neighborhood in the city where their core business is headquartered and where their family and their primary social life is centered. Other homes have to do with social seasons.

During his lifetime, the late Aristotle Onassis was one of the Richest men in the world, famous for marrying Jacqueline Bouvier Kennedy, the widow of US President, John F. Kennedy.

Onassis, whose family had been wealthy, suffered financial setbacks in the aftermath of World War I, was determined to become Rich again. He succeeded and when asked about it, Onassis said that if you want to be Rich you must live where the Rich live—even if it is in attic...”

Remember, you are buying your neighbors—and if you are renting, then you are still buying your neighbors. Your rent pays for or ‘buys’ your time in a neighborhood.

To live where the live means changing your address—revealed by your zip code, and your telltale land or mobile phone prefix. Most mobile phone companies offer a choice of telephone

prefixes, if they are available. Choose the ones that reflect a Rich neighborhood.

In real estate, the motto is "Location, location, location." Make that your motto for finding an RM. Location IS everything.

When I moved to Dallas, Texas (my 'Soul City') I rented a tiny and very old apartment in a quadraplex in The Park Cities – a very Rich and Old Money neighborhood. The apartment had no washer or dryer and no connections for a washer and dryer; and it did not have a dishwasher. All of these are standard in most apartment complexes, but living in this apartment gave me direct access to the Rich.

It also allowed my daughter to attend the Highland Park School system, which is very prestigious and many of her friendships with wealthy children from the school system are still her friends today.

When I lived in the Park Cities, I met a number of Rich men while I was performing daily tasks. For instance, while at an ATM (automatic teller machine) at my bank in Highland Park Village, a Rich man who was waiting behind me began talking to me and later asked me out.

I became close friends with a divorced socialite who lived a few blocks from me and she invited me to her parties where I met additional

wealthy men. I also became friends with a wealthy widow who invited me to her social events where I also met wealthy men.

Find the area of your town where the glamorous Rich live and LIVE THERE, period. If you can only afford a duplex or apartment that is old, has no dishwasher, no washer-dryer connections, no pool or club house, STILL live there.

Living in a Rich neighborhood is like having an ear to the ground as to what is in, what is out, where they go, when they go there, and all the constant changes they make in their "hang-outs." This keeps you current and moving with the flow of when and where they are.

Even the shopkeepers in Rich neighborhoods pick up the latest places and styles just from interacting with Rich customers.

Single Rich often live in luxury high-rise condominiums in the Rich areas and frequent the nearby Starbucks for breakfast.

How You Absorb Richness

Think of yourself as a cup of fresh, hot water and think of the neighborhood as a fine, exotic tea. By immersing the tea in the cup of hot water for a period of time—known as "steeping," the water takes on the flavor and color of the tea!

That is exactly how it is, living among the Rich. The flavor and color of their lives steep into you and you become like them—identifiable as one of them.

Just by living among them, you will absorb much of the value systems of the Rich by osmosis. You will learn how they ‘think,’ what they do, and where they go.

Plus, you become visible to the Rich. They can SEE you. When you buy groceries or dash to a convenience store, it may as well be in the most exclusive neighborhood supermarkets or convenience stores.

That is true of anything you have to do in your daily life. Make no mistake

about it; your daily life situations are the best ways to meet people if you make yourself accessible by following the guidelines for confidence in Chapter 14.

Pharmacy, liquor store, card shop, book store, bank, automatic teller machines, coffee shops, car washes, cleaners—any business. Wealthy people support the businesses in their neighborhoods and they do not always have the help doing everything for them.

I have seen a man worth fifty million dollars stop by the cleaners to drop off an outfit, simply because it was on his way to his office, even though he had a domestic staff who otherwise took care of his cleaning.

The Rich do perform mundane

tasks on occasion—especially in their neighborhoods.

Earlier in this book, I said that you want to accumulate as much in common with the Rich as possible. So: Even if you live in an attic, the Rich neighborhood (zip code, telephone prefix) is something you will have in common with the Rich.

Neighborhood Statistics

Living in the neighborhood is important for another reason. The late research psychologist, Dr. Joyce Brothers, reported that most people marry someone who lives within 16 blocks of them—someone right in their

own neighborhoods!

So...take a look around at the 16 blocks where you live right now and ask yourself if you want to marry someone from your neighborhood—which means that you may spend the rest of your life in that neighborhood or its equivalent.

Get out of your neighborhood into the wealthiest one. Plunk yourself down right in the middle of the nicest 16 blocks that you can possibly afford to squeeze yourself into and that is closest to the very best.

8

Change Your Car

*“Like it or not—Your car is
you.”*

—Ginie Sayles

Even in Dream Analysis, a car represents the person you dream is

driving it. To give a true example, one man dreamed he was out of breath from running on a street when his ex-wife drove up next to him in a beautiful Rolls Royce. She did not speak or slow down. She just drove on past him.

It was clear that he felt inferior as a man to his ex-wife, and that he still saw her as a top of the line, desirable woman.

Shortly after my aging father had his 90th birthday, I dreamed I saw him slowly driving a rickety old Model T Ford. The dream forced me to accept the fact that he was getting too old to do things he once did.

But it's not just in dreams—even fully awake, your car is you—and you

should have a car that fits into your new, more upscale environment. You will be ‘seen’ in your new neighborhood and your car ‘represents YOU.’

So, if your car is a practical, efficient car, that’s fine for reliability when you are driving to work and back; but try to get a small foreign sports car or older exclusive car as a **SECOND** car, unless you can get a new one.

When you shop for an exclusive older car, look for low gas mileage (as far under 35,000 miles as possible). You can spend tons of money on car repairs if you buy a car with high mileage on it.

I drove a practical Mazda to work; but for the Rich neighborhood where I lived in a tiny apartment, I had a

bright chartreuse MG Midget convertible sports car as my second car; and it was a real attention getter, especially with the top down.

MG—which stands for ‘Morris Garage’—sport cars are so endeared to sports car enthusiasts that they will go out of their way to meet you and to talk about their love of the MG.

A wealthy man in the Rich neighborhood where I lived saw my MG Midget and he went out of his way to talk to me because he was an enthusiast of small sports cars. He owned a black TR (Triumph) of similar vintage. And, yes, we dated after that.

Your sport car is primarily for cruising around the Rich neighborhood

where you now live.

Keep any car you have clean and absolutely no junk in the floorboards or stashed in the backseat. A well-to-do California man said he met a girl at a club one night that he wanted to see again; but when he walked her to her car, he was repulsed by the junky interior.

As she slipped inside her car, he saw the floorboards and car seats were littered with scraps, crushed paper cups, empty cans, and wadded paper napkins. He threw away her telephone number and never went out with her.

Memorize this: **Your car is your most personal environment—and when that small amount of personal environment is out of control—your**

life is out of control, too.

Every time you get out of your car, pick up any empty cups or cans and toss them in the trash. It takes less than a minute to pick up litter and dispose of it if you do not let it accumulate.

You can put a little box of small plastic garbage bags under your car seat. Just pull one out, fill it up, and toss in a garbage can. People DO judge you by the cleanliness of your car—even more than they do by the cost of it. If your car is trashy, they think YOU are trashy.

**Cars Are Changing—Stay
Current**

Transportation evolves, as history proves. Robotic influences are now emerging. The newest status symbol in cars is the Driver-less automobile—and it is too long overdue!! So many deadly car accidents can be avoided when all cars are driverless (and that needs to be for trucks, too, although keeping truck drivers to oversee the setup.

Stay as current as possible with your new or used automobiles. And if you buy Used (which is fine) be sure to have it mechanically checked out to be sure everything works and is safe.

One Thing Never Changes

This is a Ginie Rule: If you do not

have a newer electric or self-driving model car or simply a car that you like and want when you begin dating an RM, **be sure that when the relationship 'takes,' you have your RM to buy you one. Absolutely!** This should be one of the RM's first 'major' gifts to you.

Change Your Name

“Hollywood has known for decades there is ‘something in a name that has a ring of success’ to it. ”

—Ginie Sayles

Changing your image can mean changing your name—literally—if your name is dowdy or does not project the sense of excitement and romance you would like it to. Look up names or choose the name of a historical figure or celebrity whose image you would like to project.

If you love your name—**keep it!**—because you already feel good about the ‘you’ that resides within that name.

But if you have unhappy associations with your name, you are in control of your new life and that means you can **change it.**

I cannot tell you how many, many people have thanked me for this one bit

of advice, telling me how it changed their lives. It is a core way to exert control over who you are.

A man in New York read this book and later came to a HOW TO MARRY THE RICH Seminar in New York City. He said, “Mrs. Sayles, I took your advice in your Marry Rich book and legally changed my name. I had hated my name all my life and you gave me permission to take control over it. Changing my name changed my life for the better in every way. I feel more confident with people and my career is doing better than ever.”

Hollywood has known this magical secret for years—that **there is something in a name that has a ring of**

success to it. Looking back at classic movie stars who will be eternally famous, think of Cary Grant whose name was changed from Archibald Leash and Marilyn Monroe who changed her name from Norma Jean Baker.

Cary Grant said that when he was assigned his name, it changed his life. He studied it and asked himself how he thought a "Cary Grant" would act and be. He said he began to act the way the name sounded to him and that after awhile, he was not acting anymore. He really was Cary Grant.

For a man who ran away from home at age 13 and lived as a circus acrobat, I, personally, do not believe royalty could convey more dignity and

elegance than Cary Grant, who did so by living up to a new name.

Author of *Gone With The Wind*, Margaret Mitchell, originally named her heroine Pansy O'Hara. Pansy is a pretty name, to be sure; but the blood-red passions of the Civil War and unrequited love were better expressed in the name Scarlett.

The name of the heroine, Scarlett, has been recognized as one of the elements of success in the book. Change your name if it helps you feel special, new.

**Choose A Name That Means
Success**

To You And Live Up To It.

Do not change your name frivolously or often. It seems ‘unstable.’ A few years ago, an unstable woman who murdered her famous husband had changed her name several times. She was never satisfied with herself no matter how glamorous her name. Every time she came across a name that sounded more glamorous than the new one she had, she chose that name and legally changed her name.

You should have a solid reason to change your name; and to choose a name you commit to live up to...and to give the name meaning as you create your new life with a new identity. Be solid,

not unstable.

As I write this, I am reminded of another man—a television producer—who attended one of my HOW TO MARRY THE RICH Seminars and then came back a few years later to tell me that changing his name was the best thing that ever happened to him. He said that once he legally changed his name, he felt empowered and he automatically behaved as an empowered man.

He went on to tell me that changing his name not only helped in his relationships; but that his entire life, especially his career took off because he felt successful from his new name identity and his personality projected his new identity.

You should know that changing your name does not change your social security number or debt obligations you have; but your new name may give you the new self-image that helps you take control of living your life in a positive way.

10

Change Your Image

“Your entire body is a communication instrument and everything you put on your body communicates who you are.”

—Ginie Sayles

I can look at any man or any woman and instantly know how that person feels about himself or herself, and how they feel about the relationships they want, and how they feel about sex. And, I can generally surmise the social class of that person by how he or she is groomed and dressed. Grooming and clothing are a main part of Courtship Body Language

Increase your awareness: Study the man or woman just ahead of you on the escalator. Look at the details of the way the person cares for himself/herself. Look at accessories—briefcases,

handbags, shoes, the condition of the shoes, hands, nails, rings, jewelry, scarves.

Study the smooth, polished look of a woman's make-up or a man's grooming, cut and style of hair. Watch the way the person carries himself/herself, the way the person walks.

Watch the person's manner of handling others when he or she speaks to someone.

Soon you will begin to notice such differences of detail that you will realize you have sensitized your awareness like radar and can automatically recognize the Rich anytime, anywhere.

Once you do, you will begin to gradually change yourself to look more the way the Rich look in details of self-care. And, it is important that you do.

Why? Because birds of a feather DO flock together. And the way they recognize each other is by their feather. So you have to "take on" the feather of the Rich as much as you can without being pretentious.

You do not pretend you are Rich to them. You simply look and behave AS one of them so they realize you are elevatable.

The Rich who are looking for a mate will not care as much that you do not have money; but that you are **“elevatable”**—able to become one of

them with ease, or, if not one of them, to at least be yourself comfortably among them. That is not snobbish of the Rich. It is being considerate of your comfort.

Change The Way You Dress

You can identify a priest by his clothing. You can identify a police officer, or a businessperson by clothing.

Clothing identifies who you are in your world. If you met someone who was dressed and groomed in such a manner that you could not relate to them, you would never know if the person had a heart of gold or not.

Being dressed the way the RMs are dressed makes you immediately

identifiable and how to relate to you. Even if you are poor, if you are appropriate to an RMs taste, you are **elevatable**. You can LEARN to be elevatable. Begin by dressing the part.

For Both Men And Women

Color-charting can make the biggest difference of all as to whether or not you show up well in your clothing.

People often make the mistake of thinking that color-charting means there are colors you should not wear.

Nothing could be further from the truth!

Color charting lets you wear every single color there is beautifully by

making sure that you wear the RIGHT SHADE OF EVERY COLOR! Very important!

My husband looks fabulous in blue, silvery gray, and black suits. Put him in tan or brown and he fades into the woodwork. I am the same way.

In my own case, there are some shades of red that make me look like mud; whereas the shade of red that is right for me makes me look great. Get color charted and use your correct color shades and tints.

Pure fabrics are "Richer" looking. Linens, wools, cottons, silk. Also, knits, cashmere, suede and various leathers are rich looking. Real fur is OUT for humane reasons; but there are

excellent faux furs worn by the Rich. There are some man-made fabrics that are okay to wear some; but have mostly the purer ones.

Good resale shops can help you dress up your feather with designer clothing in good, quality merchandise. Some wealthy people do this themselves.

DO buy new clothing for the most part, though.

The resale items should just be to flesh out a few sparse areas of your wardrobe and to fill in with good accessories at half the price.

Have **your teeth white**; but not ‘Shoe-Polish White’ which is

distracting. See a cosmetic dentist and inquire about the fabulous new services available at reasonable prices that can whiten your teeth beautifully. Also, there are procedures that are painless, fast, and cost-effective for correcting dental defects. Beautiful teeth can take you a long way.

Have a yummy **breath**. Rely on hygiene, not mints. Use your regular toothbrush to brush your tongue and every part inside your mouth. A soft toothbrush is best and less damaging to your teeth enamel and gums.

Pop your toothbrush into your dishwasher every single night to sterilize it. You should not need a separate sterilizing process. If you have no

dishwasher, just boil some water and dip your toothbrush into it (briefly so it does not melt).

Carry an inexpensive **clothes brush** in the glove compartment of your car to brush off lint or loose strings from your clothes. If all else fails, use scotch tape at your office to remove debris before heading out to happy hour.

Keep a **hanger** in the backseat of your car and hang up your jackets when you drive so you do not look ruffled.

Check clothing seams for loose strings and snip them off with scissors.

Keep a **cloth** under your car seat to wipe a shine onto your shoes.

If you are really poor, as I was,

buy a can of **shoe paint spray** that matches your shoes to keep them looking new when they start looking beaten. I bought the shoe sprays at shoe repair shops; but you can also buy them online.

Read instructions carefully and use in a well-ventilated area, not breathing fumes, preferably wearing a protective mask or at least a handkerchief or scarf over your nose and mouth and inexpensive child's swim goggles to protect your eyes unless you have something better. Or you might spray outside away from anything that could end up painted, and hold your breath!

If you need shoes in a different color, buy a can of spray in that color

and spray paint your shoes to match your outfit.

Repurpose your clothing. Update an older outfit or change the appearance of several older items for a new wearing purpose. An affordable seamstress or tailor can do the trick unless you happen to sew and can do it yourself.

No rings on your left hand.

If you have a **feature** that seriously bothers you, talk to several board certified (by the AMA) plastic surgeons who specialize in your area of interest. Talk to people who have had the surgery you desire by the surgeons you are considering, so you can see the results and have your questions

answered.

An inexpensive full-length mirror can be your very best friend for knowing you look good when you step outside your apartment.

Tattoos and Body Piercing

Tattoos are acceptable today.

There is such a dominance of tattoos in society that it has become commonplace.

According to a recent report by *The Journal of American Academy of Dermatology*, about 36% of people in the USA, between the ages 18 to 29 get tattoos.

However, if you do not have a tattoo, and want one, use only non-

permanent, wash-off tattoos. They seem to be losing their popularity.

True, some wealthy men and women have an aversion to tattoos. However, there are wealthy athletes and musicians who sport tattoos. Even though celebrities have popularized tattoos, if you are not a celebrity, tattoos can look lower class, unless you are discreet in the use of them.

By discreet, I mean that if you want a tattoo, make it either:

Useful – some men use it for filling in areas of their scalps that are not balding but thin. Or a woman may use permanent eyeliner, which is a tattoo or permanent lip liner or permanent eyebrows. (see makeup section for

women).

A Secret Surprise – such as a small tattoo on a part of your body that will never be seen by anyone except a lover. A woman may put a small heart on her fanny that is covered by panties or bikini bottoms.

I wore “sun tattoos.” I put a heart decal on my fanny and tanned in a private location where I could be nude. My sun tattoo was a surprise to my lovers and they were delighted. I could change the decal after the heart faded. It kept a ‘surprise’ delight to a lover.

Today, some tattoo artists reportedly use a non-permanent ink that lasts a long time but is not forever.

I strongly urge you to consider

temporary tattoos or sun tattoos—at the very least, a tattoo artist who uses non-permanent ink so it may last for years; but not forever.

Upscale strip clubs look for women dancers who have smooth bare skin from head to toe. Most of them specify no tattoos. These non-tattooed dancers can make more money.

Movie producers use a ‘computer eraser’ to eliminate tattoos from a movie star’s skin looks flawless. If the ‘character’ in a movie is supposed to have a tattoo, the makeup department can apply a temporary one.

This should tell you something.

You have fewer regrets if you do not use permanent tattoos. Just as you

want to change haircuts, hair color or clothes, from time to time, you may want to change or eliminate a tattoo

Laser tattoo removals are expensive and not always completely successful. Efforts to remove a tattoo by laser can cost thousands of dollars and may require up to 15 treatments or more.

If you DO opt for permanent tattoos, be sure the company has been in business over ten years, and check to see if they are listed with Better Business Bureau. Also, see if there are serious complaints against them. Look at real people who have been tattooed by them.

Most of all, be sure the tattoo

procedures are safe. Infections are serious, not to mention diseases spread by improperly sanitized tools. Consider asking them to disinfect the tool in front of you before allowing them to use it.

If you have permanent tattoos and cannot afford to remove them or if you like them, project an air of confidence about them. Do not apologize or state any regrets to anyone. Seem proud of them. And remember, RMs will take their cue from you about it.

Body piercing should be discreet, too. If you have piercing all over your face and body, it distracts from your clean look.

Again, be discreet by limiting it. Ears, no more than two. Naval is okay for a small ring. Nothing on the face; but if you feel you must, limit it to a small stud in the side of your nose or mouth.

A male RM told me he would not want to kiss a girl with a ring or stud in her lip and that he figured a hole in her nose would make for messy leaks if she had a cold.

Remember, I said ‘birds of a feather do flock together’ and they recognize each other by their feather. The same is true of social classes. Tattooed people love other tattooed people so there is no lack of love for having a tattoo. It just depends on whose love you want. **There are definitely**

some RMs with permanent tattoos and they will feel fine about your tattoos, if you already have them.

Remember this: If ever you need to change your identity, you cannot do that as long as you have tattoos because they will give away your true identity.

Too many tattoos and too many body pierces look desperate for attention and smack of low self-esteem. Think more of yourself than that. Make it discreet or nothing.

And if it is too late, now; just move ahead—tattoos and all—with confidence toward your marry Rich goals. As I said, there are RMs who have tattoos and piercings themselves.

11

For Men

*A Modern Princely
Image*

*“Change your image to
Elegant Dressy and Elegant
Casual to change how women
respond to you.”*

—Ginie Sayles

Making Rich women aware of how wonderful you are includes your image. If there is disparity in how you see yourself (or want to see yourself) as opposed to how you really are, begin making some changes to close the gap.

Change as many things about yourself as you can. Remember, making changes does not mean there is anything wrong with you. Not at all. It means that you are repositioning yourself in the true light of you that can bring you a better life.

For Men

Forget movie stereotype of male gold diggers as suave Gigolo types. My male seminar students and consultation clients who intentionally married into money were not at all the stereotypical Gigolo type.

Some of my male students were profiled in a front-page article about me and my work in a major news media; and one of the men was a businessman and the other was an actor.

In Boston, a small group of Harvard Law School graduates, already practicing law, attended my Marry Rich seminar and at the end they stood and

gave rousing applause. One lawyer attended my Marry Rich seminar three times because he said he liked the logic presented in it.

And I cannot tell you how many male (and female) physicians, lawyers, psychologists, and business men have had private consultations with me. Many of them are financially well-off; but they want a woman who is very Rich.

Historically, male artists, including sculptors, writers, and actors, have sought wealthy women as patrons. A patron financially supports the artist and uses her influence to further his career.

Artist: The middle-aged wife of

an oil man in Texas was on the board of her city's art museum when she met a young volunteer. She learned he was a struggling artist, who simply loved being around the museum's art and volunteering for whatever was needed of him.

Her husband spent three months at a time in foreign countries, setting up mammoth oil deals. He would fly home for a week before going back for another three months.

Interestingly, this oil man was faithful to his wife and typically, he would call her to come to one of the cities where he was so they could attend social events there together. She had always complied and their marriage was

considered successful.

However, she became interested in the work of the young volunteer artist and soon they were having a delicious, passionate affair that added a zest of excitement and happiness to her life that made her feel young again.

Quickly, she undertook his living expenses, moved him into a nice condominium, bought him a sports car and enjoyed taking him to another city to buy him clothes. Best of all, she had leading galleries look at his work and she gave an art showing for him in her home when her husband was in town.

Her husband was completely unaware of her new transgression; and he continued to call her when he was out

of the country to ask her to accompany him to a slew of social events.

Always, she had complied, no matter what obligations she had to cancel; but now, she made excuses, citing that as a member of the Board of the Museum and as a leader in the city, she would let down too many people if she left.

This went on for two years without her husband suspecting anything. But he told me that it was when she finally joined him in England, she seemed distracted and a little nervous while socializing with his business partners and their wives—something she had always enjoyed before.

Two days later, she suddenly told

him there was a problem at the museum that she was most adept at handling and that she must leave. Within hours, she was on a jet back to Texas—and her odd behavior and reluctance to stay in England with him tipped off her husband to the probability that she was seeing another man...even worse, that she must have been missing her lover.

Instantly, he contacted a respected Private Investigator in Texas to set up surveillance and to let him know as soon as possible.

And surely enough, his suspicions were confirmed by the PI, who told him she was now conducting an affair, often meeting romantically in the home she shared with her husband during her

husband's absence on specific weekday afternoons. When her husband was in town, she rendezvoused with her lover time at the young man's condominium that she paid for.

The oil man realized his wife and her lover were due for their tryst at the oil man's mansion. Without packing, he caught a jet to Texas and arrived on the day of their tryst. The oil man parked a block away, walked to the back of his mansion, let himself into the back terrace, where the master bedroom opened onto the swimming pool.

Through bedroom's the ceiling-to-floor glass door, the RM could see his wife and her young lover having sex in his own bed. Without a word, he picked

up one of the heavy wrought-iron terrace chairs and swung it with full force through the giant glass door.

Shocked, the couple stood up, naked and speechless as he trounce over the broken glass into the room, commanded the man to put on just his pants and immediately leave the premises. As the young man carried his socks, shoes, and shirt and left without a word, the RM informed his wife their marriage of thirty-five years was over.

And it was.

It was a messy, long-drawn-out divorce but his wife came out of it a wealthy divorcé. As soon as the divorce was final, she moved in with her protégé and the oil man began dating a movie

star, who called him when she read about his divorce.

He did not marry the movie star and his wife did not marry the lover she had risked everything for; but the lover came out all right. Throughout their affair, he had made great connections with other women who had money and he married one of them.

Intellectual men always attract a wealthy woman who enjoys mental stimulation. If she can enjoy his mind and his body, she will probably marry him.

Actors: Classic movie star, Clark Gable, of *Gone With The Wind* fame married a woman for her money to help his career and everyone knew it. She

was a wealthy Houston, Texas woman who enjoyed financing his ambition.

Years later, when he fell in love with movie star, Carole Lombard, he had a difficult time getting a divorce from his wealthy wife because she told him that she had made his name famous and she felt his name belonged to her as his wife. Note: He eventually did get a divorce and marry Carole Lombard.

Political men do very well.

Through involvement in political parties, they meet the powers behind the throne—both male and female.

I like to tell the TRUE STORY of Benjamin Disraeli, Prime Minister of England who openly married for money. He admitted it was his goal.

“I may commit many follies in life, but I will never marry for love,” Disraeli said and he lived up to his declaration. He was honest about it when he married a much older widow of great wealth and influence.

Disraeli’s so-called gold digging marriage was extremely happy and many men who knew him said they most admired and envied his happy marriage.

His wife loved his intellect and his political plans. She felt the excitement he brought into her life was worth every penny she invested in his career.

Each day when he arrived home, the couple enjoyed tea before a low fire in the library and discussed his day. She

fully backed his ambitions, often advised him on his strategy and without a doubt, his marriage to her led to his political success.

Your Princely Image

Hair, beards, body hair, clothes, accessories: Men should also go online or pick up brochures and leaflets in fine men's stores, such as Brooks Brothers for unfailing classic styles; or men's sections of the best department stores and study the clothing. Also, study the clothing in good men's fashion magazines online.

You do not have to look as extreme in your clothing as some of the

clothes the male models wear; but it will keep you aware of trend in styles for:

Hair Length or Bald

Hair and Beard Color – If you are in your forties and early fifties, silver hair is elegant. As you get older, you will look younger if you touch up some color and leave some gray, especially around your temples.

Facial hair – smooth and sleek, or stubble, or neatly trimmed beards

Body hair – whether it is all shaved off or not

Sideburn length – short, long, shaped

Lapel width

Tie width

Accessories

Fabrics

Pattern combinations for the
upcoming seasons

Tucked or Untucked shirts

Length of casual shorts

Study and note **CHANGES** in style. You
can alter yourself accordingly.

Manicure, Pedicure: Keep your
nails very short. Trim off all the white
that extends past the pink nail plate. You
do not need the white to show.

Jewelry: Men need at least one
really good-looking watch; and you can
do that with a classic Bulova. A few
years ago, Ralph Lauren's Polo shop
sold a very nice Bulova watch. And
remember, semi-antique watches (as
long as they run well) can be touchingly

worn because it reminds you of your grandfather, et cetera. Tiffany's advises gentlemen not to wear diamonds and that includes watches or watch faces—more new money showy. And many younger men use their mobile phones for the time, rather than wearing a wristwatch.

And today's technology is introducing wristwatches that may eventually double as a smart phone. They are expected to include video chats, notifications, and various aps that make life easier. Bill Gates offered one through Timex many years ago that never took off as expected; but the newest ones should be pretty exceptional if they get the bugs worked out. Keep checking into it.

Many Rich men, though, do wear good looking wrist watches as part of their prestige image. They usually have a 'wardrobe' of watches and a very nice watch box to hold all of them. All the RM has to do is to open his watch box each morning and choose the watch he wants to wear.

A gold watch for dress wear and a good-looking leather strap watch for daily or casual wear. If you can only have one; a gold watch can be worn anywhere.

If you choose gold plate for better pricing, get a good gold plated watch from a jewelry store. It will cost more but it will last longer and you will get just as much value out of it as you would

for a more expensive one.

Excellent pieces of jewelry can be bought second-hand, sometimes from pawnshops and gold and silver exchanges.

The economy in the last few years has had many well-to-do families quietly selling off their jewelry. You could come up with a real find.

NOTE: One of the earliest gifts a wealthy woman should buy you is a Cartier watch (or other that you might prefer), so when you are dating a wealthy woman and she asks what you would like for birthday, anniversary, other holiday, a fine gold watch is always appropriate, as are sport cars.

Fragrance: A masculine but very

classy scent makes a statement about a man. Imperiale by Guerlain is very classy.

Ties: When you wear a tie, be sure it is a vibrant tie or an unusual tie. Neiman-Marcus had a tie with the statue of liberty on it that was fabulous!

Pocket Scarf: You may want to put a handkerchief that matches your tie in your upper jacket pocket.

No Tie Coat & Slacks. Stay aware of styles. Sometimes it is popular to go tie-less with your collar button open, coat, and slacks.

Tucked or Untucked Shirt. Again, watch the latest guidelines on tucking in your shirt. Certainly, when you are at work in a business that values

wearing suits, ties, and tucked-in shirts, you want to dress accordingly. But, if it is an open environment and you see others not penalized for it, and if fashion currently endorses it, untuck your shirt, even a dress shirt, and feel free to wear a sweater over it, even if your shirttails hang out from the bottom of your sweater. The style has been in for quite awhile, so watch for any change to it.

Jeans, shirt and tie, jacket.

Unless your office execs do this, maybe not; but otherwise, it is a good look.

Jeans, tee shirt, jacket, no socks. Wonderful look on men at a casual brunch, casual weekend events and outings. Again, if your workplace sanctions this style, embrace it. KEY: A

more expensive tee shirt or very good quality tee shirt.

Have A Role Model

Men should read books (ebooks or physical book) about the lives of Rich men and of Rich women, too. It gives an inside understanding of how they tick—and it can often trigger great ideas for you to meet the women or even ways you can make money, too, just from studying the wealthy men.

Is there a Rich man you admire to some degree? Read about him. Study his image because, believe me, he is likely very image-conscious.

You can find clothes and shoes of

similar style—just be sure the quality is good. Dress as closely like him, as you can.

Sales And Resale

Try to buy mostly new clothes; but you can flesh out your upscale looks with some pieces from good resale shops.

Google “Men’s Resale Clothing” and “Men’s Resale Clothes Online”

Exciting, tasteful and modern men’s clothing designs by upscale designer, Joseph Abboud for Men’s Warehouse, are all made in the USA. These are beautiful fabrics, fine

workmanship and stunning styles fit for a prince like you!

*Even Cinderella
Had A Makeover*

“Cinderella was dressed as if she belonged at the ball and behaved as if she belonged there. You can do that, too.”

—Ginie Sayles

Remember, in order for Cinderella to “crash the party” and get away with it; she had to “look as if she ‘belonged’ at the party. That means she had to ‘dress the way the people were dressed at the party. She had to look the way they looked and behave the way they behaved. Once she looked the part, she had to ‘act as if she belonged there.’

You can do that, too.

Package Yourself For Relationships

You can tell, just by looking at a woman when she is dressed for a social

occasion, how she feels about men, about herself, and about sex.

Look at the covers of magazines for single women. They dress their cover models to send a message that is loud and clear to men that they are packaged for relationships.

You want everything about you to communicate that you believe...

Men are wonderful.

You are wonderful.

Sex is wonderful.

If there is disparity in how you see yourself (or want to see yourself) as opposed to how you really are, begin making some changes to close the gap.

Change as many things about yourself as you can. Remember, making changes does not mean there is anything wrong with you. Not at all. It means that you are repositioning yourself in the true light of you that can bring you a better life.

Glamour always attracts men. Glamorous styles are sophisticated, body-conscious clothing in vibrant colors and good fabrics over the preppy look.

Preppy has evolved to an ageless, timeless dress style of nothing too low-cut or showy. It is a nice look of quality; however, a women's fashion magazine polled men nationwide a few years back

and found that most men considered preppy styles too plain and boring.

Men like it occasionally as a change but not daily as an ongoing look. A sophisticated look is the look that won.

Preppy clothing is mainly part of the body language among women who are married or who do not need to establish themselves with an appearance that has instant impact.

Preppy clothing says "I am not a threat. I am sexless and safe. I am a woman's woman."

Sophisticated body-conscious clothing says "I am a threat. I like men, sex, and me. I am serious about relationships and if you do not take care

of yourself to keep your man interested, I may get him."

Do have some preppy clothing to wear when you are with other women and occasionally with men for the subtle impact of the preppy style; but body-conscious clothing in vibrant colors attract Rich Men as long as the clothes are tasteful.

And have a classy jeans look: jeans with a fitted long-sleeved shirt, a nice blazer, belt with interesting belt buckle, boots.

Jewelry: Wear bright gold jewelry near your face and on your wrists. Bright silver is all right, too, especially if your coloring is best-suited

for silver; however, gold has a warm look.

Do try to have one piece of really good, unusual jewelry that is a conversation starter. Have some good, reasonably priced costume jewelry as well. Be sure it is not junky looking.

Some Rich groups do not wear anklets (ankle bracelets) and no toe rings; but other Rich females wear them judiciously, just a thin anklet of real gold.

Manicure, Pedicure: Shorter, well-shaped fingernails with a natural, buffed shine or in classic red or a sheer pink tint are always correct. Be sure all your nails are the length of your shortest

nail.

For longer nail styles, the same applies. Press-on nails work in an emergency. Salons today offer reasonable prices for long and short nails. Check into them.

Toes do not need the white upper part of the nail – so be sure the white is completely cut off and all your little toes have ‘nubbin nails’ that only have the pink nail bed. Nothing else. No French manicure on toes. Bright red is always great on toenails; but you can opt for a clean, well-buffed shine with no nail enamel or you can use sheer white or sheer pink. A few offbeat colors occasionally can be fun and perk up your style.

Fragrance. The right fragrance can make you memorable. And a good fragrance can make you feel expensive and exciting.

Do not wear a heavy perfume that announces your arrival before you get inside the door and irritates someone's sinuses when you are gone.

A person should only be able to smell your fragrance from 4 inches away from you, at most; not 4 feet away from ! So, no strong scents that announce you. No perfumes that leave a strong, lingering scent.

Such perfumes are old-fashioned and out-of-date. Try a lighter eau de perfume or eau de cologne that makes

you feel fresh, feminine and refined.

Note: If you want your fragrance to last all day long; spray it into a cotton ball until it is saturated and tuck it inside your bra. You can reuse the cotton ball a couple of times with the scent built up.

I wear a fragrance my husband had custom blended for me called *Exclusively Ginie Sayles*. It combines refinement and soft sensuality. I love it! And enough people asked me about it that my websites sold it an eau de perfume spray.

Permanent Makeup: Many wealthy women and celebrities do this. Women may have lip color or eyebrows applied or a very, very thin eyeliner.

And some individuals have used it to cover a birthmark – although there are much better methods of having birthmarks removed. Try to make it as natural as possible and locate a professional through a cosmetic surgeon's office, if you can. Do not simply use a store-front salon.

Over The Counter Or Custom Cosmetic Makeup

Young women have a lot of options. A healthy young woman does not need anything unless she has skin problems. And a lot of makeup styles depend on which part of the world is yours.

In New England, most Ivy League female students wear no makeup at all. However, some of the same young women will wear a sheer mineral powder to cover any complexion problems, because a good mineral powder looks as if you are not wearing any makeup. This is the same trend in many parts of Europe.

In the South, Southeast, Southwest, and West Coast, young women go either way – no makeup to some makeup; but those who wear makeup typically wear more than those mentioned above.

Natural Makeup Look. For makeup with a natural look, stick with mineral powder – but READ the labels.

They are not all the same. If it lists talcum or aluminum or other fillers or additives, it is not a ‘pure’ mineral powder.

Before putting on your mineral powder, be sure to let any moisturizers you use first completely dry – about 15 minutes. If you don’t have much time, put on your moisturizer and then blot it dry with a cloth or tissue. Use your mineral powder liberally. It will look natural and great.

For Natural Eyes, use skin-tone eye shadow. The lightest goes over your lid, just above your eyelashes. Brush off excess so it looks natural. Then use a shade barely darker for the last ¼ th of your outer corner of your eyelid that has

the lighter color on it.

This same slightly darker shade goes in the crease, beginning in the middle down to connect with the outer $\frac{1}{4}$ th of your lower lid.

Blend any outer edges of the shadow so there is no ‘line’ of demarcation where the shadows begin or end.

No eyeliner. If you use mascara, use a water-based, simple mascara that does not clump or lengthen. Just touch the ends of upper lashes.

For Natural Lips, use a light brown eye pencil to outline your lips and smudge it. You can add red lipstick – and blot, blot, blot to remove the vibrant color, which just leaves it

natural looking but not brown.

Women between thirty-five and forty may want a natural look; but they need more color in their makeup.

Definitely clearer, well-defined colors in lipstick, and at least mineral powder to smooth skin tone.

Personally, I prefer lasting lipsticks—the kind that last all day. I like plum colors because they complement dark blue eyes and fair complexion, which I have.

A natural look is fine for young women in casual daywear; but nighttime dressy or formal occasions require bright or clear red lipsticks, a touch of rouge, and well-defined eyes.

Log onto the Internet to see

images of the late John Kennedy Junior and his young wife, Caroline Bessette Kennedy. Caroline fully represented the upscale, Ivy League female who wore little or no makeup during the day or on week-ends on the boat. But look at Caroline Bessette Kennedy when she was dressed up or out for a nighttime occasion—she wore the **classic bright red lipstick, matching nail polish, and eye makeup that made her eyes show up.**

GLAMOUR GIRLS And
ELEGANT WOMEN WEAR CLASSIC
MAKEUP and CLASSIC RED
LIPSTICK and NAIL POLISH

Many wealthy women have professional makeup artists come to

their houses to resculpt their features with makeup before they go somewhere special.

The same is true for their debutante daughters.

Have a professional makeup makeover by a professional makeup artist, not a cosmetic sales person. A sales person will do the best for you he can; but he has to sell the cosmetic line he represents. That is understandable; but not always best for you.

It is best to schedule an appointment with a makeup artist who does not sell a line of cosmetics. Many of these makeup artists work for television stations or for photographers. Ask a model's photographers to

recommend a few makeup artists.

The very best makeup artist I ever had worked at Harpo Studios in Chicago for Oprah Winfrey—the second time I was on Oprah. He was an African-American gentleman whose skills as a makeup artist really impressed me. I have been on a lot of media shows who had good makeup artists; but he really was the very best. If I knew his name, I would give it here. He deserves it.

When you visit a top-notch professional makeup artist who does not sell cosmetics, take your own makeup along and ask the makeup artist to look at your cosmetics first, and to choose the colors you should keep and to recommend the colors you should get.

Then the professional makeup artist will show you how to apply the correct colors for you. Ask for a glamour look.

I suggest you have a professional makeup artist give you a make-over every two years to keep up with changing makeup and changes in your skin texture, coloring, etcetera.

Hair. Hair is EVERYTHING. A great cut is the basis of great hair. You want hair that looks great when you wake up in bed next to an RM. You want hair that looks great when you have been in the wind and just need to run your fingers through it a few times. Nothing complicated (unless that is the new look among the upscale set you want to

penetrate). Great color finishes a great cut.

Hair Cut. Keep up with hairstyle changes unless they look too silly, too extreme, too old or too young for you. Haircut can lock you into a time period/time warp, if you are not careful.

A classic Bob either short or long, layered or smooth will always be a tasteful style; but you do not want to wear any style to the point of boring. And changing your hair length, even by an inch, can put a shot of energy into your look.

Short cuts require firm, tight chins, fairly flat ears, nice neck, and good features. When your hair is short, all emphasis is on your face.

Also, if you are over forty, be especially careful to emphasize the youngest part of your face.

For example, a forty-year old woman in San Francisco, California had a private consultation with me. She wore her hair pulled back with bangs, explaining that she thought a young hairstyle would make her look younger.

I pushed back her bangs and found that her forehead was very smooth and unlined, whereas the lower half of her face had lines around her mouth and her chin was sagging.

There is nothing wrong with having lines around the mouth or even a sagging chin line; but her hairstyle emphasized her older-looking features

and completely hid her youngest facial feature.

I took her to a salon and had her hair lightened two levels, parted on one side with her bangs swept off her face, and softly layered so that her hair moved around her shoulders and neck and distracted attention from her chin. She looked more glamorous and years younger.

Hair color. If you are single, color your hair when gray starts showing. No matter what some men may say to you, color it. Nothing has helped women look younger longer than hair color.

With hair color, you can be forty

years old and be mistaken for being in your thirties. But if you have salt and pepper hair, no one will say you look thirty-two.

Oh yes, people will say your salt and pepper hair is beautiful; but no one will mistake you for younger and they will probably think you are older. Salt and pepper hair is beautiful but not youthful.

Gray/silver hair is fine for single women in their late sixties if they mix and mingle with an older single set of friends who mostly date within their age group and if they all have similar hair color.

But, frankly, I think a single woman of any age can get more dates if

she has a youthful hair color. Blond works well because new gray hair growth (hair roots) do not show up as quickly as if a dark hair color is used. I knew a well-to-do gentleman who absolutely did not want his wife to let her hair go gray.

A young woman in her twenties or early to mid-thirties can bleach her hair to platinum silver and look stunning. But if the same woman is sixty and she looks sixty, then silver hair is aging, even if it is a beautiful color.

However, it will not be as aging if her silver hair is all one length in a smooth page-boy style, collarbone to shoulder length.

Hair Accessories. A classical

upscale hair accessory is a headband. Nice, tortoise shell (or look like tortoise shell) combs or clasps can help you add variety. For dressy occasions, a jeweled (faux or real) comb or clasp looks elegant.

Underwear. For no bra dresses that nipple lines would seem tasteless, I buy Nexcare Gentle Paper Tape at my pharmacy—and tape strips to flatten nipples and give a smooth line under sweaters or backless dresses. I find these peel away with no pain.

For plunging necklines in a dress that needs no bra, I use the old “pageant girl” trick of pulling breasts together into cleavage and then taping the breasts

together with duct tape (Read my first book, *How To WIN Pageants*). I am careful to remove the tape in the shower and very, very gently because it can hurt if it is just yanked off. If you do this, be very careful not to tear your skin as you remove it.

If you want to wear a bra because you may be using it as part of seduction later, try the various, sexy push up styles. Be sure they are clean, lacy and lovely and wafting with soft fragrance you add.

When you entertain a lover at home, wear a fitted tee shirt and no bra and do not worry about your nipples showing. That is part of your appeal.

Panty lines should not show through your skirts and slacks. You can

wear pantyhose with a thin pantiliner for cleanliness and keep a smooth sleek look with no panty lines.

Various styles of underwear, including garters, teddies, and such help you feel sexy. Some that are cute with fun slogans or pictures on them can add interest to the moment.

Be sure you have some undies that are provocative, sexy, erotic, even titillating, definitely naughty, a little indecent, and completely immodest. To show an opposite side, have a few nighties that are innocent looking with lace, ribbons, and bows.

And, of course, there are times to wear absolutely no underwear at all! And you know when those times are.

They are times when you feel totally, totally sexy.

Have A Role Model If It Helps

You do not want to clone anybody! However, having a role model is part of the learning process. It is like going by a recipe when you are learning to cook. Later, you can add ingredients to individualize it, but for the time being, it is the way you learn your basics.

Role models were indispensable for me. I have had many at different times in my life—BUT...!

MY ENDURING ROLE MODELS

ARE:

CINDERELLA – who had a makeover and then the moxie to crash the hottest party in town in order to take her chances with the Rich Prince (RM). She did not know him. She was not in love with him. Aaah, but she knew what it would mean for her life to marry him.

QUEEN ESTHER IN THE OLD TESTAMENT OF THE BIBLE— who was entered in a royal beauty pageant by her uncle and chosen by the King (RM) to be his wife as Queen. She was groomed and dressed by the royal court before the

lineup when the King chose her.

Realize that Queen Esther did not know the King, much less marry for love. She married for the opportunity to improve her life and as Queen, she was able to help protect her race of people.

*Change What You
Do With Your Time*

*“If you want to be Rich, you
must...go where the Rich go
and do what the Rich do.”*

—Aristotle Onassis

If all you do is sit home and watch television, all your efforts to create a new image and live in a new neighborhood will go to waste. But it will all pay off beautifully if you **reinvent yourself with new activities.**

Change as much as you can in the way you live each day. Whatever path you normally take to work, try several different ones.

If you typically eat lunch at the same place, change it. Change locations several times. Rotate them.

Whatever you typically do after work, do something different. Go to a

different Happy Hour location every single day for two weeks. Let new people see you and get to know you.

Get On Prestigious Email and/or Texting Lists

Go online and sign up for email or text notifications from art galleries, performing arts theaters, humanities and historical groups and as many associations and organizations, and political groups, as you can.

You can stumble across some interesting events while you sift through the information.

Keep up with popular or important Apps (applications) for your

mobile devices because it keeps you in the ‘mental loop’ of what is going on.

Be sure your name is on lists for email and text messages of every art gallery in the finer parts of town and attend them.

Volunteer for your community theater, even if it is just to hand out programs at the door for performances. You need new blood in your life.

Get a part-time week-end job at a country club or for a special event being held at the country club.

Change, change, change what you do with your time. This is vital for breathing new life into your desire for an upscale world.

If you cannot afford to go to the events, get part-time jobs or volunteer work that put you there. One famous golfer married a woman who was selling drinks at a concession stand at a championship golf tournament.

Take lessons, get jobs, volunteer—anything to put your butt on the property of events where the Rich are.

Change Your Awareness

Being wined and dined by the Rich takes you into some exquisite restaurants with noted chefs and tempting menus that you want to sample.

But always choose your food based on what is good for you. So,

unless your doctor says otherwise, I think you will be basically okay if you stay aware of healthful food choices, even in gourmet restaurants.

As an aside, I have also found that when I take vitamins regularly, I feel better. See if your doctor thinks you can benefit from vitamins, too.

Your Life Changes When You Change What You Control

A woman who attended my first HOW TO MARRY THE RICH Seminar in Dallas, Texas and took to heart what I

said about changing as much about yourself as you can, attended my other seminar A FOOLPROOF GUIDE TO MEET MEN a week later.

"Ginie!" She said, "Since I took your MARRY RICH class last week, I lost three pounds and lightened my hair three shades. I am looking for a sports car, plus I have changed my name from Dorothy to Ashley—and—"she added, triumphantly, "a new man just sent me flowers!"

All the changes she made to her self-image resulted in an excitement about her life. The new excitement she felt plus the WAYS that she changed resulted in her getting the attention of a man she wanted to notice her.

Numerous men in various professions have lauded the effect it had on their lives, on their careers, and on their self-esteem.

14

*Project That
You Are ‘A Catch!’*

**—Body Language
& Attitude—**

*“Posture tells the world how
to treat you, from sight alone.*

*This is the Rich Mystique of
Confidence
in Body Language and
Attitude.”
—Ginie Sayles*

It is important to project that you are ‘a Catch!’ Your personality and your body language are the keys to projecting that you are ‘a Catch!’

What is ‘a Catch?’

A Catch is a person who exudes

‘an air of success in relationships’ ...that anyone who gets you is lucky. A Catch seems to have other fish to fry if someone is not interested or not responding as they hoped. A Catch never puts all his/her eggs in one basket—never!

How do you become ‘a Catch?’ Well, even if you have a string of losses in relationships, you must not talk about it—it sounds ‘victimy’ and a catch is not a victim.

And you must not complain about the relationship you are in to the person who is in the relationship with you and not complaint about it to anyone else.

Instead, you must project that you are a winner in love. You must project

the ‘air of success in love.’ Just take an ‘attitude’ that the opposite sex likes you—repeat this mantra always—that “women/men are wonderful, you are wonderful and sex is wonderful.”

You will feel more wonderful and be increasingly approachable as you learn how to project confidence. And it is important to know what Confidence is and is not. Confidence is NOT arrogance. Confidence is being comfortable with yourself no matter where you are and no matter who is there.

Confidence in a man—more than looks—is the quality that most attracts Rich women. Confidence in a woman has been tested as the quality that

appeals to Rich men, second only to beauty (which can be improved with confidence).

**Be “APPROACHABLE”
With
The Rich Mystique Of
CONFIDENCE**

What Is Confidence? Confidence means that you know what you are doing in a given situation. You are sure of what you are doing. It does not matter if it is driving a car or flirting, confidence only comes when you have done something over and over enough times and made

enough mistakes that you finally learn how to do it right. Then you do it right automatically and you do not have to think about it anymore—that is confidence!

And Confidence means you are comfortable with yourself at all times and in any situation. As you learn the following skills, you will become increasingly comfortable with yourself. Your new confident behavior will feel natural.

If you do not feel confident in a situation, then confront the situation and deliberately practice, practice, practice doing whatever it is you do not feel sure of until you do feel sure—confident.

Confident Body Language

Confident body language signals a healthy self-esteem. If you do not feel confident, practice the following behavior that successfully reeks confidence.

Posture: Posture tells the world how to treat you, from sight alone. This is one of the most important principles I have been teaching for years. People can tell from your posture if you are fearful, sick, tired, unhappy, excited, feeling like a loser or like a winner.

Posture is the single most

important body language there is. Just let a man try looking macho with slumped shoulders! Erectness is confident looking, manly, authoritative, sexy.

Posture talks all the time, even when you do not. People will believe what your posture tells them you are, more than they will what your clothes tell them you are.

You can be dressed in a million dollar outfit; but if your shoulders are slumped over and you stand in a slouch, you will not attract anyone. But if you are standing upright with great posture, people will think that ‘you are **SOMEbody**’ and you deserve it!

Grooming: One of the first indications that a person's morale is dropping is when daily grooming habits slip. The more fastidious your grooming, the more confidence you project. A quick, five minute shower and shampoo – just in and out – in the morning can do more for your image and your confidence than anything else. Just DO it.

If you let your hair air dry while you dress, that is fine, too. Just make it a natural, daily part of yourself. You will eventually get to the point where you cannot tolerate not having your shower – and that is a giant stride toward richness of self.

Eye Contact: Practice looking people directly in the eye, even when you are just walking in a shopping mall. Eye contact helps you establish a position of confidence in the minds of others.

Voice: Let your voice carry just a tiny note of anticipation. Sound as if you are expecting a wonderful interaction with each person you talk to. Enthusiasm and humor can be projected in a gentle way. It does not have to be overly eager or loud.

Humor is an asset. Simply, humor is an attitude that projects an easy tolerance of the world around you. You

do not have to be funny or witty; just laugh easily.

Facial Expression: An interesting face is more attractive than a handsome or beautiful face that looks bored. How do you have an interesting face? By having an “interestED” face. Look interested in life, in the moment.

A bored face looks boring. The most perfect features in the world cannot hold the interest of the opposite sex unless there is life and energy in the face.

Anytime you look at something, if you look for something you can *like* about it, then your face will carry a glow

and your eyes will shine.

If you look at something and immediately think about what you do not like about it, then your face takes on a slightly sour look and your eyes dull within a frown.

Happiness: I call this The Attraction Principle. Happiness attracts. It magnetizes people to you. This world is so hungry and starved for happiness that if you have it, people want to be near you, to let you shine on them. They feel you must be special to have a happy life.

What if you are not happy? Fake it. It is a funny thing, but happiness

behavior breeds happiness itself. Happiness becomes a habit and then a way of life. Happiness creates its own immune system against many ills of life.

Energetic Walk: Walk with energy and purpose. Do not amble. Wear an expression of joy on your face. Greet people casually, in passing, with direct eye contact, smiles, and sometimes a brief, warm, but impersonal "hello" or "hi." Continue on your way. Do not try to make a relationship out of it.

Center Doors: Confident people mostly enter buildings through the center-most doors of a building, whereas less confident people tend to

enter buildings through the doors closest to the walls.

Center Paths: Similarly, less confident people walk closer to walls in hallways and on sidewalks they walk closer to buildings.

Confident people walk centermost in hallways and on sidewalks.

Stand 16 to 19 Inches

Distance: When I was on the PBS Special: *People Like US: Social Class In America* (which is on YouTube), I gave a private consultation and showed my consultee

the most confident distance to stand from people by using a tape measure. I was told that segment became the PBS ‘Promo’ to advertise the program and that tape measures were given away as part of the promotion.

It is a good idea, too; because a flexible tape measure can help you learn the most effective distance to stand.

Confident people stand between 16 and 19 inches distance from a person.

Less confident people tend to stand too far away from people or much too close to them.

Buy an inexpensive, cloth tape measure at a fabric shop and practice walking to a mirror. Stop walking at the point where you feel comfortable

(realize you may feel more comfortable with you than with others, though.

Measure the distance you stand from your reflection in a mirror. If it is more than 8 inches, move forward until you are standing 8 inches from the mirror. Your mirror reflects an equal 8 inch distance, which creates the impression of 16 inches. Practice doing this over and over until you can stop automatically at about 16 inches from someone's face and look them in the eye, chin up.

Do Not Use Your Body

As Buffer: Confident people do not angle their bodies away from someone, using their bodies as a buffer. They stand

full-front, full-faced toward a person.

Shoulder-To-Shoulder:

When joining a circle of people who are talking to each other.

Confident people move exactly into the circle, standing just about shoulder-to-shoulder (discounting height differences) with those on either side.

Less confident people who join a circle of people, will stand just a fraction behind those on either side of them. They may not be noticeably out of the circle, but they are psychologically not placing themselves fully in the circle as an equal.

Such standing choices trigger subtle cues of whether or not you fit in

and feel confident doing so. People will respond to you on a subconscious level according to the cues you send. Force yourself to enter a circle of people as an equal to all.

Sitting At Tables: When alone in a restaurant or food area, people who lack confidence, choose tables that are not in the center of the room.

—Confident people, even if alone, want the **center-most tables** in the dining areas or eating areas of outdoor cafes.

—Less confident people choose the chair that puts their backs to the main action of the room or dining area.

—Confident people choose the chair that allows them to **fully face the most action and to be seen by the most people.**

Packages/Purses/Briefca

Less confident people fill empty chairs around them with packages or purses or briefcases, preventing anyone from sitting next to them.

Confident people put their packages on the floor, next to them, leaving empty chairs as a "possibility" for someone to fill (even if no one does).

Props

Less confident people tend to bury themselves in a prop—a digital book, mobile phone texting, iPods, laptops.

Confident people may or may not have a prop, but usually not. If so, they use it sparingly, pausing to glance around and to interact casually with people. If you carry a prop, that is okay, as long as you look up from it and interact with people. Also, if you have a paper book, make the title interesting enough to stimulate questions from someone nearby.

In other words, props can cover self-consciousness, yes; but they can also be unsociable. Less confident

people are less sociable. Typically, they are not very happy and may be inclined to cynicism. All this can be resolved through learning the skills in this entire section. And you learn by **practicing** the skills.

Have One Genuine

Manner: Have one, genuine manner that is the same at all times with people of any socio-economic class.

Select three people this week with whom you will initiate a conversation.

—One person you select should be someone you do not feel intimidated

by at all. Maybe you even feel a little superior to that person.

—The second person you select should be someone you feel comfortable with, someone you consider an equal.

—The third person you select should be someone who seems a bit over your head; Perhaps you feel a little inferior to that person, or self-conscious. It is a person you have always wanted to impress.

Now. Practice talking to each of these three people—not just a comment, but a full-fledged conversation—and use

the SAME subject.

Having one, genuine manner will give you freedom from phoniness and self-consciousness and add to your attraction of RM's immeasurably.

Only those people who have no breeding whatsoever act rude, cold, haughty, or save their BEST behavior for people who are Rich or "somebody." My grandmother, Eva Addron Carroll Barker used to say, "People who treat others like dirt have not risen very far out of the dirt themselves."

The way YOU behave from now on is to practice a loving, warm, cheerful manner with everybody.

Initiate Talk: Confident

people are not afraid of being misinterpreted by simple greetings or casual friendliness.

People lacking confidence are afraid they will seem as if they are desperate and that they will be interpreted as coming on to someone if they speak or behave in a friendly way.

As long as you are in a safe situation, speak and interact with people.

I like to believe that inside every person is a millionaire just waiting to be inspired. Maybe you are the one who can trigger the goal, by treating everyone as if they are millionaires.

Live your own life your own way, with your own morals and no apologies to anyone.

At the same time, be a charmer of happy interaction for people you meet. When you talk to someone, you are recognizing that person. You consider the person worthwhile. That is a nice, daily gift.

Limit Talk: Although you talk to people, you do not linger. Do not initiate more than 3 to 5 sentences with one person.

If nothing takes, so what? You are not just talking to people you want a relationship with; you are talking to people, period. You are talking to people who seem basically safe and sane.

If you keep trying to make a relationship out of a greeting, you can seem pushy. Accept it as a bright spot in your day, limit your talk, and move on to other people.

Leave First: Be the first to end any social conversation with an RM and to move away. Your life is full and you have things to do. You are not hanging on to the moment because your life is empty and you are waiting for this person to make it important for you. **If this is not true for you, yet (*and we are trying to fix that*), then act this way, anyway.**

Once you have indicated you are leaving, leave. You lose effectiveness if

you talk about going but end up staying after your good-bye.

Positive Self-Talk:

Always, always, always be on your side if you make a mistake. You may say a brief, "Sorry, or 'excuse me," but never agree with negatives others may say to you about you!

If someone makes a negative comment about you, disagree quickly. "That is your unfortunate perception. I am exactly the opposite."

However, do not get into an argument that gives the other person the power to goad you. But **definitely do not agree with negatives about you.** Such comments by others are ALWAYS

lies. Always.

Beautiful 20th century movie star ,Joan Collins, was once quoted in *Parade* magazine as saying, "Show me a person who hasn't made any mistakes and I will show you a person who has not achieved very much." Make that your motto as you grow through any mistakes.

TREAT YOURSELF BETTER
THAN ANYONE ELSE CAN TREAT
YOU – NEVER SCOLD YOURSELF
OR BERATE YOURSELF OR JOKE
ABOUT YOURSELF OR BLAME
YOURSELF. NEVER!!!

**People treat you the way YOU
treat you.**

People Believe What

You Say About Yourself:

Choose your words carefully about yourself. If you spill milk on the floor when you are at home, alone; do not say, "Oh, Graceful!" or "Dummy!"

No. You would not say that to a guest who spilled milk at your house. You would say, "Oh, it's nothing. Don't worry about it." Well, say those very words—out loud—to precious little you, who has only you to look to.

If you say, "What I did was stupid," people may politely say, "No, it was not;" but inside, they believe you because you are the ultimate authority on you.

Every time you criticize yourself,

you are giving listeners “permission” to criticize you, too. Why? Because you are the ultimate authority on you and so you must know—and they subconsciously believe you.

Remember, it is your job to teach people what to think of you and to value you. Speak well of yourself. No lying bravado, of course; but speak well of yourself.

So Change What You Say To Yourself ‘About Yourself.’ Judge yourself Generously. No constant self-editing. It damages charm and erodes confidence. There is an old saying, “do SOMETHing, even if it’s wrong.”

Basically, it means that if you are worried about what to do, that worry will create a self-consciousness that is worse than doing the wrong thing. And if you do the wrong thing, tell yourself, **“I am willing to do the wrong thing in order to learn how to do it right and it is okay.”**

No Isolation Devices:

Earphones are isolation devices.

Earphones say, "Do not bother me. I am busy. What I am listening to is more important to me than meeting people and having relationships." This is also true of burying your head in an iPod, iPad, Smartphone, physical book or magazine.

Comfortable With

Self: Who is the most important person in your life? You are. And you are with you all the time.

Do not judge yourself by someone else's descriptions of you, such as a parent's unfair criticism or critical comments by friends, former lovers, former employers, or anyone who has described you jokingly or with criticism. *Choose your own, happy self-descriptions.*

Once you upgrade the messages you are sending about yourself through the improvements you learn in this book, you can begin getting the response from people that you want. Get all the

obstacles out of the way as quickly as possible so you can feel comfortable with yourself.

Write down as many situations as you can think of that are uncomfortable for you. Then choose five situations at a time to work on.

—Confront each situation that makes you feel inferior in your mind.

—Go through a practice situation with your mirror or with a video camera if you have one.

—Role-play the situations with someone you trust, if you like. If there is no one, write it out and act it out, anyway.

Not Upset If Not Know

Something: Have you ever seen television coverage of Queen Elizabeth II or the Pope visiting a country? When they visit, they tour factories, and witness traditions they know nothing about.

Do they become embarrassed or feel that they are less a person or confess to being a goon for not knowing it?

No, indeed. They have learned that there is no way they can possibly know something they have not been exposed to (which is the only gap between you and the Rich). They know there is no shame in their lack of knowledge, even though they are the

Queen and the Pope!

They rightly consider this experience to be the opportunity that will expose them to new information. They enjoy it as such. So, they approach everything with a mild manner that expects to be told about it all. They inquire without the slightest embarrassment. They respond with a interest.

Do not dwell on the fact that you do or do not know something. Smile and take the new in stride with interest.

Easy, Casual

Friendliness: Pass people and casually say "hi" without pausing to see if they say anything back.

That is the best method. Just speak, pass, and do not try to make anything out of it. Do not wait for response or approval.

Undismayed By

Rejection: Confident people are also more successful in relationships because they realize that success in relationships is a numbers game. They know that a certain percentage of the RMs they meet and strongly desire will not work out.

The relationships that do not take are not a personal ego failure for them. Instead, they play the odds by increasing the number of RM relationships in their

lives.

Not Easily Intimidated:

Confident people develop techniques that counter intimidation. For example, learn how to handle sales people with a kind friendliness that keeps you in control. You do not have to explain and do not.

Never be rude and if they become rude, themselves, or try to intimidate you, look the sales person directly in the eye, smile, and say, "Thank you, I'll let you know if I see something."

If the sales person persists, do not act flustered. Stay serene and answer **WITHOUT** smiling, "What is your name?"

The sales person may answer,
"John."

You say, "Thank you, John. I will
let you know if I see something."

Then continue looking,
unhurriedly. Dress up when you do go
Desire Shopping (Follow the Chapter on
Desire). Look as good as you possibly
can for your own feelings of strength.

**‘A Catch’ has a ‘Full
Calendar’
– Places to go, People to
see, Things to do!**

Never stay at home, curled up
with your cat or dog and eating a

microwave dinner. Get you butt out SOMEWHERE. A full social life gives you a life! And you have to ‘create’ a social life for yourself—that is your job. No one else can do it for you. You owe it to you. How do you create a social life?

—Join male-female hiking, jogging, sailing, horseback riding or biking groups.

—Absolutely join ‘reputable’ online dating services – a real ‘catch’ has a booked-up date life.

I used to joke in my seminars by saying DATE ANYONE WHO IS SANE and BREATHING—AND BREATHING IS MORE

IMPORTANT! Everyone laughed because they knew I was exaggerating for the purpose of emphasis. But remember this, the opposite sex finds you far more desirable if you are dating than if you are not.

—Learn a new skill—something out of your comfort zone, maybe.

—Take a cooking class, mechanics class, real estate class, investment class—absolutely anything to keep you ‘in’ life and not on the sidelines.

Be cheerful and seem happy everywhere you go. **NOW, THAT’S A CATCH!**

Be A PowerFlirt™

“Everything we do is a learned skill. Skills give you more control over your life. Skills are your best friend.”

—Ginie Sayles

"Maybe..."

Your most effective flirting signal says, "Maybe..."

You are not saying "yes," and you are not saying "no." You are signaling "maybe..."

‘Maybe’ is sexier than either yes or no. Maybe is sexy flirting. And flirting is the last safe sex we have, so enjoy it to the full!

Most important of all – flirting is non-committal. You can flirt to your heart’s content and you owe nothing to anyone—and vice versa. When you flirt or when someone flirts with you, it is a mild sexual compliment.

To flirt is to acknowledge the

attractiveness of a person—but flirting does not mean you would want to marry the person or even to get acquainted (although it may lead to that but just as often will not). Flirting is not serious.

Flirting allows you to send up trial balloons before risking a more serious investment of time and interest. Remember, the invitation in flirting is “maybe.”

If you think you do not know how to flirt, don't worry, flirting is just a skill you can learn. It is another tool in your relationship-building toolbox.

You do not just flirt with your eyes. You flirt with your body, through the body language of clothing and your posture. You signal your attitude with

your facial expression—especially your eyes.

Remember that BodyFlirting™ begins with your wardrobe, so review Chapters on clothing to be sure your clothes send a classy-sexy style for both men and women.

The Importance Of Skills

Success with RMs is more likely according to your proficiency in the signals you send for courtship behavior and relationship skills. Flirting is a fabulous skill for interacting with RMs.

At one time, I would have turned my nose up at the notion that a person needs skills to meet and marry an RM.

Skills. The word had a phony ring

to me. It sounded as if I would have to play act or pretend to be something I was not.

I felt that if a relationship was right for me, or “meant to be,” that I would not have to do anything at all. No indeed, I thought that all behavior would fall into place naturally with that person.

Then I began to realize that just because you have all the right ingredients in your kitchen, does not mean you know how to cook. And, there is no disgrace in learning how to cook from a cookbook. The same is true for learning relationship skills from this book.

Skills are your very best friend. Skills are the nicest thing you can do for

yourself—because skills give you greater control over your own life. And that includes your social life, your relationship life.

The Skill Of Flirting

The BodyFlirting™ Of Posture:

Posture is integral to sexy flirting. Try flirting with slumped shoulders. Just try it!

Male Body Language: When a man is available, he sits or stands in a full-front, open position (no crossed arms or feet or legs), facing the main action in the situation.

He looks women over, even if discreetly. He looks longer at a woman who interests him than a woman looks at a man who interests her.

He changes proximity nearer a woman he wants to meet or nearer groups of women in general.

Female Body Language: When a woman is sensuously available for a relationship, she sits with one leg crossed over the other—and the higher her leg is crossed over her other thigh, the higher wattage her signal is!

Crossing her leg this way forces a provocative arch at the base of her spine, jutting her breasts up and forward. Very mating-callish.

If she crosses her leg down low over her other knee, she is simply resting. The more interested in men she gets, the higher her crossed leg scoots up her thigh!

For both men and women—flirting succeeds most when you are in a fun or light-hearted frame of mind—energy high. You cannot flirt successfully when you are depressed or tired. So, I had to train myself to "rev-up" and flirt.

The following is the rev-up formula I used successfully and that many of my students have found works.

—Deliberately arch your back into the highest, best posture of anyone. You arch just above your hips.

—Deliberately walk at a much quicker pace as part of the rev-up.
—As you walk, begin to **concentrate on liking everything around you** so that your face and eyes take on a lively sense of excitement (excitement stimulates love gland responses “endorphins”).

That is how I revved-up. If you use my technique, then *as you are walking with a frisky purpose & with your posture provocatively high and your face luminous and happy (fake happiness if you must), then...*

—look deliberately into the eyes of EVERY person of the opposite sex you pass for 2 full, piercing seconds—

and then slide your eyes away into the direction you are walking.

At the moment your eyes begin sliding away, start smiling. You are now smiling after the fact, not during the eye contact—although you looked radiantly happy as you entered eye contact.

You can actually count **2 full seconds** of flirting eye contact if you like. In Flirting count 1 – 2 —then glide your eyes away to the side.

Flirting – 1 - 2—glide your eyes away!

Do not jerk your eyes away because that looks fearful or that you did not like the person.

If you have positioned yourself where RMs are, you will have turned at

least a few Rich heads, even though some RMs may not respond at all —and that, my friend, is how it is for all of us —some respond and some do not; so you are not to worry about it. Just let it go and keep moving forward to more RMs. You only want RMs who want you. You are only interested in RMs who are interested in you. You only give your time to RMs who respond to you.

Verbal Flirting: You can speak or not because flirting can be either verbal or nonverbal.

If you do speak, the most important thing to know is that it does not matter what you say. Just say something. You do not have to say

anything clever, intelligent, or even half-bright—just say something—simple, forgettable comments.

An RM remembers the emotional impact of your personality, not what you say. And the RM likes that a connection was made between you that allows him/her to interact with you now.

My husband and I cannot remember what our first conversation was. It does not matter—we are married.

The Importance Of Practice —for Handling Rejection

The instant you get a negative response to your flirting, then you must

do it again with someone else, and someone else, and someone else until you get the response you want.

Practice means "**it does not count.**" So if you get a negative response from someone, it does not count because you are just practicing.

And when you **do** get the response you are looking for, do it again and again, logging into your system only the responses that you like—shrugging off the ones you do not like.

Success Is A Numbers Game

If you are flirting with only 5 people a day and 3 of them—or even 1 of them responds negatively, then you

may feel a little rejected.

But, if you are flirting with 25 to 50 people a day and as many as 10 of them do not respond, you won't care! You won't even remember them!

That is why it is so important not to pin all your hopes on the response of one RM —because if you pin your hopes on one response and it does not work, you feel defeated.

If, on the other hand, you are open to ALL RMs for flirting and conversation, then you increase your chances with everyone you meet.

You have put the odds on your side. Benjamin Disraeli once said that opportunity comes to those who have prepared for it. I believe that with all my

being.

Prepare for the opportunity.

Prepare, prepare, prepare. Prepare means to practice your social, flirting, conversation, sparkly, smooth people skills and you will be ready for your RM.

For those of you who saw me on a national talk show with my students who met a Rich man during one of my Marry Rich Fieldtrips, the following checklist is the one they used when it happened.

ASSIGNMENT CHECKLIST

Goal Reinforcement: Casual interaction is the first lesson in flirting.

Freshen grooming

Posture (what does your posture tell the world about how you feel?)

Pace (walk just a fraction faster than your usual walk)—not just amble along as if you have no place to go and nothing to do. Move with energy.

Look with interest at environment around you as you move. Stop occasionally and show interest in something nearby.

Have an "I know you like me" expression; not a "do you like me" self-worth questioning expression.

Notice people and briefly smile without lingering as you glance away to the next person— both sexes, all ages.

Be observant in every location as

to the number of people of the opposite sex

Notice traffic patterns in places you go and walk against it/ sit facing the traffic/stand at the crossroads of it or at the end of it (eye contact 1-2 seconds and then look away!)

Do not overstay in one place nor leave too soon

Make a comment in passing about whatever a person is looking at, in the same friendly tone you would make it to a friend

Every time you interact with someone, congratulate yourself with pride for having done so, **NO MATTER WHAT YOU SAID** (as long as it is not crude)

Speak first to someone who is standing next to a person who interests you, so that person can see you interact with others (your friendly personality). Also it is then nonthreatening when you say something to the person who interests you.

Check out any center displays, seating areas, stairs, escalators for activity. The busy areas are where you want to be (in the center of action) so you can casually flirt with numerous people.

Flirt -1 - 2—look-away. Do not jerk your eyes away. Let your eyes glide away to the side

If in a restaurant, have quiet but cheerful animation with server. You are

not flirting, just interacting. This allows others to observe your personality in pleasant, general friendliness.

SELF-EVALUATION

Assigned Locations:

How many women/men did you see en route to

store #1

store #2

store #3

How many women/men were in:

store #1

store #2

store #3

Where, en route, were you when you made your comments-in-passing?

To whom did you make your comments? (general description if no name)

What were the comments you made in passing?

How did you tie in your comment to the situation or person?

Did you say it nonthreateningly?

Did you care what the person's response was? If so, that inhibits you. Learn not to dwell what the response is, and do make another comment to someone else.

Did you establish eye contact (friendly but not personal, not meaningful)?

Did you keep walking?

How did you feel just before or as

you made your comment or question?
What was your immediate feeling
after you said it?

What was your self-talk afterward?

Did you feel good about it?

Did you feel that whatever you said
was all right?

Did you feel as if you said something
wrong?

Did you feel self-conscious? If so, it
means you need to do it more often
until you lose the self-conscious
feeling.

Did you use your body as a "buffer"
as you spoke?

Did you immediately feel exultant
that you said something no matter

how you felt before speaking? You should because you were successful just by achieving your personal goal of interacting.

Did you feel uncomfortable or self-conscious at any time?

If so, at exactly what point each time — and why?

What do you consider your biggest problem in this exercise?

Realize that **only you** can solve the problem if you **practice whatever was uncomfortable for you, over and over, until you are competent in that skill**. It will not come to you any other way, except deliberate practice.

Take the area that you felt was

your biggest problem and zero in on it as your number one priority in your next assignment, while continuing to fulfill the rest of the checklist as well.

How To Handle Rejection

These are important steps to take anytime you feel you have been rejected: Realize that **rejection has nothing to do with you**. That is the truth. It has to do with what is going on in that person's life at that moment.

You do not know what is going on in the life of the person you are flirting with or interacting with:

—He or she may have a major business loss in hand.

—The RM may be seriously involved with someone else and would not respond to the ghost of Marilyn Monroe.

—The person may have recently experienced a bitter relationship and wishes to take it out on someone else.

Whatever it is—the "readiness" factor—that all-important element—is missing and there is nothing you can do about it, no matter how hard you try. It is no reflection on you.

The minute you experience that shriveling feeling of being rejected, not

good enough, ineffective, foolish in your inner self, immediately realize that it isn't you AND immediately convert the experience into "just practice!"

The person didn't count anyway because you were just practicing. Anyone who does not respond—and even those who do—are just practice until something solid develops. And, if you keep practicing, something WILL develop!

Immediately and deliberately interact with three or four other people within the vicinity who were not around when you interacted with the other person. Do this for your own sake of not letting the experience defeat you.

You are learning. You are

growing. If a little baby scolded itself after a fall, it would never learn how to walk.

Instead, the baby gets up again and, fall or no fall, keeps working at it until it gets it all down. Do the same thing as you interrelate with the opposite sex. Get up and interact again!

There are so many fun ideas you can come up with that you will laugh whether they work or not.

You can leave cleverly-designed, enticing messages on an RM's answering machine. I did this with an RM and had wonderful success.

Do not do anything in your pursuit of an RM that embodies criminal dishonesty or serious character

dishonesty. Certainly nothing serious enough to damage a relationship if known.

Funny, clever ploys that are flattering to the person being met are best. The pursuit of an RM should be approached with humor and fun and the instinct of a gambler — willing to risk losing for the chance to win!

PART II

The Rich

16

Who Are The Rich?

“An RM who is Net Rich or Debt Rich will not matter as long as the RM keeps your debts and lifestyle solvent.”

—Ginie Sayles

**I am dedicated to improving the lives
of a misunderstood minority...**



The Very Rich!

Copyright © 1990, 2014 Glain Sayles
ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

How is Rich defined? *D*

Magazine once defined Rich as the ability to borrow. That is a good definition. The US government defined affluence as earning over a quarter of a million dollars, which is \$250,000.

The Rich define themselves interestingly. Many of them will play it down or simply say they are successful, without being specific.

Anytime you hear someone loudly bragging, “I am a multi-multi-millionaire/billionaire” it is probably not true. I say this because I was once part of a sting on a Houston man and his wife making such loud claims as they tried to get people to invest in their

phony gold mine.

The investigating team had me wired and sent in to pretend I was interested in investing in the scheme. I got involved in the sting (as did others) because I had been approached to invest.

Even my daughter, who was in grade school at the time, wrinkled her nose and whispered to me, “Mom, I have never heard your friends who have money talk that way.” And it was true. The men I dated who had money never talked that way. They were unpretentiously about money.

Once when I was interviewed on a radio show in Tennessee, I mentioned to the female host that my husband attended Sewanee (University of the

South)—a private and prestigious school in Tennessee that has a sizable number of students from Rich families across the USA.

Moments later, a man called into the show on his mobile phone to ask if my husband is Reed Sayles. I said yes and he chatted a few minutes about having attended Sewanee with Reed.

The host asked “Sir, are you Rich?”

He paused and said, “Let’s just say I am comfortable.”

After his call, the host said to me, “Ginie, the caller said he is ‘comfortable.’ What does that mean?”

“It means he’s Rich,” I said. I am sure that Reed’s old friend who had

called in and heard my answer after he rang off, laughed, knowing it was true. And it **is** true.

Many Old Money individuals are modest about their wealth and downplay their largesse. It is a respected trait among them.

Definitions vary; but the premise of this book is that:

Basic Rich begins with one million dollars net worth apart from home and personal belongings.

Super Rich defines a person who has reached Billionaire or Trillionaire status.

.gov Rich We will, however, honor the U.S. Government's definition of Affluence, as long as the definition is based on Net Worth apart from home and personal belongings.

What is Net Worth?

Net Worth is the value of an RM's resources after you subtract what the RM owes on what he has borrowed (subtract the RM's debt).

Net Rich versus Debt Rich

RMs who have substantially more

net than debt create an RM style I refer to as **Net Rich**.

RMs who are so highly leveraged (borrowed) that they live glamorous lifestyles while juggling assets, create an RM style I refer to as **Debt Rich**.

Debt Rich are one step ahead of creditors and one step only—not substantially. They are as risky as a junk bond and might be better termed **Junk Rich**.

Now, do not start panicking that you might end up dating someone who is Debt Rich instead of Net Rich. Believe me, you will not be able to tell the difference and the Debt Rich can be

worth more money to you in some cases than the Net Rich.

Why would it be more money to you? Because the Debt Rich, who are lifestyle conscious, want to impress you with their wealth as much as they want to impress anyone. They can be fun, lavish, and they take you places and introduce you to people who can help you. Too, while you are with them, you will meet other RMs for future relationships if this one does not work out.

There is also the possibility that a Debt Rich personality will get far enough ahead of the debts to become Net Rich.

Since you will not be able to tell

which Rich is which, just hustle so that you get everything you can while the getting is good—savings, clothes, jewelry, car, furniture, condo, investments, savings

Whatever type of Rich your RM is will not matter as long as your own debts and lifestyle are paid for by your RM. Just be sure you have put aside what you can get out of them in gifts and money to keep you independent from them if it turns out your RM was Debt Rich.

17

*The Rich And Your
Money*

*“Save 50% of every cash
dollar you receive from
an RM and do not touch it.”*

—Ginie Sayles

The whole point of this book is your financial benefit. If you stay dependent on an RM for any and all money you have, then you are vulnerable to instant poverty if the relationship ends.

You need a few easy lessons in financial self-protection.

What I Learned The Hard Way

Many years ago, when I was single, I tithed money to a televangelist ministry. And I gave money to organizations that helped the poor and I volunteered in hospitals.

Then, the company I worked for went out of business. To make matters worse, my car broke down, completely, and I could not go for job interviews.

The car repairmen examined my car and said it would cost over four thousand dollars to repair it. I was staring into the face of rent, electricity, telephone, and water bills—and I had absolutely no money beyond my last paycheck.

It was when I received a letter in the mail from the televangelist ministry asking for me to donate more money that I realized an awful truth. If I had tithed to my savings account even half of what I had tithed to the televangelist ministry, I would have had money enough to repair

my car.

I had dishonored myself by thinking the needs of others were more important than my own future needs. I took for granted I could always have money.

The job of each one of us is to provide and care for the little baby we were born into being. That is our number one job. After we do that, then it is our blessing to give to others.

Keep in mind, always, that **you dishonor yourself if you do not give money to your future needs, just as if you were meeting a needy person from the future.**

A wealthy CEO in Canada who is a generous philanthropist had a private

consultation with me; and as we discussed her wealth, she shared that she became wealthy because her iron-clad rule was to “Pay myself first,” she said, then pay my other debts and then my debt to society by giving to those in need. She viewed her savings as a debt she owed herself.

Giving to you shows respect for others as well as for yourself because you are not expecting them to take care of you.

Giving to you shows respect to your Creator (whatever your concept).

Smart Money, Baby!

Do save at least 50% of any money you receive and don't touch it.

This is emergency money. Emergency does not mean an item of clothing you think you just have to have. Emergency money is not used for a trip with your friends. Those are separate savings.

My frugal grandmother, Eva Addron Carroll, never had to rely on anyone to support her. She often said, "There is more money in saving than there is in earning." I have found this to be completely true.

I am very proud of one of my consultation clients who saves 75% of money an RM gives her. She eventually saved enough to begin buying income-

producing property but without using all her savings.

Create An Emergency Fund
—A Get-Out-Of-Town-Fast Fund. An emergency is survival-related. Serious illness, death-related situation, escape from a threatening situation and **only then if you do not have an RM to cover those costs!**

**Do Not Become A
Loan Company
To Family Members**

Once you are securely married to an RM and have generous

access to the RM's money, you can help your family members, if you wish.

But, until AFTER you are married, do not let family and friends know the RM is giving you money. If Family members know you have an RM giving you cash, they can drain you for a down-payment on their house or for their new car or to pay their bills. Eventually, their money problems become your money problems.

It is okay if they know the RM you are dating but not married to buys you clothes and a car (only if you want to tell them) but NEVER tell them the RM gives you money or covers your bills.

Seriously! They will ask you

for money; and you will end up having problems with these people (yes, even relatives)—and they will never like you better once your money is gone.

Have your RM “mentor” you about investments. Several RMs I have known said they enjoyed funding a lover’s investments.

Have your RM put money into the same investments for you that the RM has in the RM’s investments.

Apart from the RM, I suggest you consider putting money regularly into Roth IRAs (at this writing you can have more than one) and at this time, smart money goes into Index Funds, as well as into an interest-bearing savings

account.

One very young woman was very smart to have her RM buy her a nice duplex in a good area near a University. She rented out both sides; but when the relationship eventually ended, she moved into one side and rented the other. It was already fully paid for, so she had a good deal.

A True Story Of Love And Money

A terminally-ill older gentleman twice brought his beautiful young wife to my *How To Marry The Rich* Seminar in California.

He was a well-educated man from a foreign country, who had made a lot of money. His first marriage was arranged and had been a very happy marriage. When his wife died after 36 years of marriage, he missed her and eventually he sent back to India for another wife.

His second marriage was also arranged and she was a very pretty young woman. As father of several adult children by his first wife, he confided to me that he was frequently frustrated with his young wife's immaturity and felt more like a parent than a husband. For that reason, he was glad they had no children together.

A few years into their marriage, he was diagnosed with cancer.

Expensive cancer treatments were financially draining and his young wife was very extravagant. He worried about her life after he died.

Although he was disappointed in his second marriage; he felt a strong fiduciary responsibility to his second wife. His will made generous provisions for his children and for her; but his family was large and the money was widely spread out among them.

If his second wife lived prudently with the money he left her at his death, she would be provided for; but because she was so immature and extravagant and because she had no interest in learning anything about money, he knew she would soon create debts and have a

difficult time managing her life.

He said that her life was dominated by vanity and what she could buy. She did not want to go back to her home country and she did not want to pursue education or a career.

But she was pretty and young and **he thought her only hope after his death would be to marry again and to someone who had money.**

She did not like to read books, so he brought her to my seminar twice and throughout, he often nodded agreement as I spoke. During the break, I overheard him talking to her, trying to be sure she was learning.

He died a short time after the second seminar; and I was told she took

her money and moved to New York. I have no idea what happened to her; but to this day, I am deeply touched that her late husband, even as his health was failing, tried every possible way to help his wife, who did not want to be helped. I hope she absorbed enough of the information to benefit her financially in relationships.

Youth and beauty do not last.
Relationships do not last.

You are all you have in the long run. So, you must protect yourself financially. You must.

*Rich Class
Distinctions*

*“Behavior and self-care
distinguish a person as Upper
Class more than money alone
does.”*

—Ginie Sayles

People often ask me to define "Class." Class can be defined by education—including specific schools—by neighborhoods, by jobs, i.e. blue collar/white collar, by memberships in specific clubs, by sports—equestrian, sailing, lacrosse, crew, tennis, golf—by income divisions, and related social divisions.

For example:

1. Upper Class
2. Upper Middle Class
3. Middle Class
4. Lower Middle Class

5. Lower Class

HOWEVER, the expression, ‘**Class,**’ typically refers to **behavior and self-care** that distinguishes a person as being from the Rich Upper Social Class as compared with other social classes.

But first, you need to understand a bit about Class Distinctions deliberately created by the Rich to set themselves apart.

The Negative Side Of Class Distinction

Throughout time, the Rich have sought ways to differentiate themselves from the poor.

It is the old saw of The Haves versus The Have-Nots. Those who 'have' wealth create ways to set themselves apart from those who 'have not' wealth. They create a 'feather' so to speak – identifying traits, clothes, possessions, self-care, and behaviors that allow them instantly to identify others as being 'one of them' or not.

There are several examples of class distinction over time—including the old days of owning horses instead of mules, carriages instead of wagons, and owning cars instead of using public transportation of trolleys or buses. And, of course, of being able to pay more in traveling for 'First Class' over 'Coach.'

The list goes on and on. On a

more mundane level of class distinction, we have seen small ways the Rich have sought to set themselves apart from lower income people. With women, it was largely details of self-care and showing the world they did not have to work:

Body Size As A Moneyed Class Distinction

In the Nineteenth Century, poor people were skinny because they had little to eat and they worked hard in labor-intensive jobs.

To separate themselves from the hard-working poor, the Rich considered ‘corpulence’ (what we could consider to

be overweight today) as attractive and desirable. They often entertained with lavish nine-course dinner parties that lasted for hours.

Corpulence (overweight) set the Rich apart from the poor because it was obvious they had an abundance of food and they did not have to lift a finger to plant it, harvest it, or to prepare it or to serve it.

The gap between classes narrowed by the middle of the Twentieth Century when supermarkets made food abundant to all in the Western civilizations and fast food was both tasty and inexpensive. As a result, poorer people began to gain weight and to look as corpulent as the Rich.

Immediately, the Rich sought a new class distinction from the poor by popularizing a very, very slender body weight. This new status symbol of very thin body weight among the Rich implied that corpulence was nothing more than sloppy fat, due to slovenly eating habits of the poor, who ate cheap, nutrient-deficient foods.

The Rich wanted to show themselves as more particular and selective about their foods and to eat less, not because they had to but because they did not need to...that they could take its availability for granted. Weight of 98 to 100 pounds for a Rich woman became the gold standard. Of course, there are happily overweight Rich

women but most of them are not vying for Rich men

Tanned Complexion And Rich Caucasian Women

In the Nineteenth Century and early Twentieth Century, tanned skin was looked down upon as evidence of hard labor in fields by poor migrant workers or middle-income people who worked their own farms.

Plus, poor women or lower middle-class women washed their own clothes and hung them out to dry, getting tanned from sun exposure, in spite of wearing bonnets.

So, Rich Caucasian women prized

pale complexion because it was a status symbol that they did not have to work outside and they had servants to do their laundry, keeping the Rich women out of the sun. Even Rich women with naturally dark complexions stayed out of the sun to keep from looking as if they worked outside.

By mid-Twentieth Century, electrical devices, such as household washing machines, clothes dryers, and other labor-saving devices became commonplace in homes of even lower middle-class families. Now the poorer Caucasian women could stay inside and have untanned, unfreckled complexion, too.

Immediately, then, the Rich

created a status symbol of tanning. This indicated their servants were the ones who stayed indoors to use the labor-saving devices while the Rich could lounge beside their swimming pools or jet around the world to the most beautiful beaches and do nothing more than to enjoy the sun on a yacht, or while playing golf or sailing.

This new status-symbol of thin, tan bodies that set the Rich apart from the poor in that era created the moniker 'The Jet Set' which emphasized their class difference.

In other words, poorer counterparts might diet to lose weight and go to a public swimming pool on their days off to copy Rich tans; but they

could not afford jetting to the most expensive and beautiful places to soak up the sun. How snobbish can people get!

Upper Class Fingernail Lengths

Short fingernails were also a sign of the working class woman because labor damages delicate nails. Hands were rough and cuticles torn. Even housework was very hard on nail care and nails would break.

To distinguish themselves from poor, working women who had to do their own housework; Rich women grew their nails long and had them

professionally shaped and painted with nail polish. They did not have to worry about their nails breaking because they did not have to perform housework or any other activity that would cause nail breakage. So long nails became a sign of a luxurious lifestyle of money.

By late Twentieth Century, technology gave poor and working women acrylic nails that looked exactly like regular fingernails and lasted much longer. There was no worry of breaking a nail while cleaning house or running errands; and if she did, there were easy acrylic patch jobs or stick-on nails that took care of it. A laboring woman could have long fingernails that looked just as good as a Rich woman's.

At that point, Rich women, wanted to distinguish themselves from nail care that was now commonplace and available to the poor; so the Rich woman began to shun long nails—shorter, nicely shaped nails became the obvious identification of a Rich, Upper Class woman's hands.

Rich Upper Class women began to distinguish their manicured nails with:

- Shorter nails
- A buffed shine
- Clear nail polish
- Classic red, especially with matching lipstick for very dressy or formal occasions

Upper Class Cosmetics And Makeup Application

I have already alluded to differences in cosmetics and makeup of Rich women. This, too, evolved over time.

Apart from the days of Egypt and Cleopatra, when women of the royal court wore elaborate eye makeup and adornment; women during the middle ages of Europe did not wear makeup as we know it today.

However, fastidious cleanliness, fine oils, fragrances, and extravagant hairstyles and clothing were relied on to distinguish upper class Rich women from poor ones.

In time, powder was used to keep complexion looking smooth, light touches of rouge for lips and cheeks that were scarcely noticeable; as well as smoothing eyebrows, eyelids and eyelashes with oil.

Once women were allowed to perform on stage it changed the role of makeup. It is hard to believe now, but at one time, young male actors played the roles of females because it was considered indecent for a woman to perform on stage.

Makeup was used in stage performances so the audience could see the actor's features or to emphasize the role an actor was playing.

For a number of decades, women

actors (actresses) were looked down upon by the Rich. Women in theater were considered working women by the Rich and beneath them.

However, some Rich men became interested in women performers and took them as mistresses—some even fell in love and married them; but it was rare.

After motion pictures created female movie stars, makeup became acceptable and the cosmetic industry as we know it was born.

Rich women sought more expensive products that were essentially the same but that claimed to have superior ingredients. Interestingly, a very powerful and Rich magazine editor, Helen Gurley Brown, once said that she

had tried expensive and inexpensive makeup and she never found any difference except price.

Rich upper class women set the standard for Classic Red lipstick and matching nail polish for fingers and toes when attending formal events.

Neighborhoods, Clothes, Automobiles, Club Memberships

The Rich continue to separate themselves from the poor by living among other Rich in Rich neighborhoods.

The Rich distinguish themselves

from the poor with clothes that are custom made, monogrammed, or have expensive designer labels.

The Rich distinguish themselves from the poor by driving a car that is instantly recognizable by the car's insignia or hood ornament as very expensive. Some have chauffeured limousines (car and driver)

The Rich distinguish themselves from the poor by congregating in private clubs with memberships that must be approved by other Rich members.

Why do the Rich do all this? They want other Rich immediately recognize they are 'one of them.' And they want people in general to know they are Rich

without their having to say a word about it.

Is this snobbery? You bet! No matter how much the Rich deny it. Snobbery is a way to distinguish yourself from others—to set yourself apart as better.

So, yes, the bottom line is that the Rich are definitely snobs. It may be subtle; but when they adhere to Class Distinctions, they may be polite but definite snobs.

However, even among the Rich there are Class Distinctions. In fact, there are 6 different types of Rich and they are very different from one another. Some will not even associate with each

other outside of a charity or social event.

My sequel to this book, *How To Meet The Rich for Business, Friendship, or Romance*—and considered by some to be my best book—lists profiles of the 6 types of Rich and tells what they wear, their furniture, habits, et cetera; and gives in-depth ways to identify each type and how to cultivate each type for business, for socializing, or for romance.

The Positive Side Of Class Distinction

The positive side of Class

Distinction is that you can more easily identify the people you want for relationships; and since birds of a feather do flock together, you can more easily locate where they are and go there.

You can imitate ‘just enough’ of ‘trappings’ of the Class you want to attract to have something in common with them—however, as I have said earlier in this book, when it comes to attracting the opposite sex, you want to maintain enough of your own distinctive self to keep them curious about you.

Profession And Social Class

Most wealthy people socialize

with people who have a similar or related profession or educational level; or are in the process of getting there.

Do not let this bother you; because there are ways to get around this. For example, in the *Dear Ginie* section of my *Ginie Sayles Quarterly*, I received a letter from a woman who read an early edition of this book, *How To Marry The Rich*.

She explained that she worked as a maid for a housecleaning service; and that after reading the book, she set her sights on a physician and ended up getting a date with him to attend social events with his friends and their spouses.

She needed a response from me

before her date with him to meet his friends.

Her concern was that when asked what she did for a living, she was hesitant to say that she was a maid because his friends and their wives might not look past her employment to see her personal qualities.

I advised her to:

—Do what Cinderella did—
Cinderella did not tell the Prince she was a maid to her stepmother. She just arrived “dressed to look as if she belonged there.”

—Enroll in one or two classes at a

local college—and if she could not qualify as a student—then enroll to “audit” the class. No one has to finish high school or have good grades to qualify to audit a class. When people audit a class, they do not have to do homework or take tests because they will not receive a grade for it. BUT it would get her in the college door for our purpose.

And what is the purpose for this? Well, when one of the physician’s friends eventually asked what she did, she was able to truthfully answer, “I am a student at XYZ college.”

No matter her age, this is admirable. Plus I told her to say it with

forthright confidence, even if she had to fake it. She could not sound wimpy or apologetic. She must sound strong and happy about it.

Also, she was not to say she is auditing. That is nobody's business. The truth would be that she was attending college. She may not have finished high school, I don't know; but by saying she is attending college, it implies she finished high school and it also removes any social stigma of what she does.

Here is the complete answer I told her to give: "I am attending XYZ college/university. My greatest interest aside from drama, which I am studying, is the local community theater. I have recently signed up as a volunteer for

their next production (which I told her to be sure to do).

THEN – she must turn his friends’ attention away from her by asking one of the people there a question, especially ask if they have children, then how many, then whether they are girls or boys, what their ages are....et cetera – because if she charmingly keeps them talking about themselves and their interests, she will win out.

I also told her that if anyone persists by asking “Do you just go to school or do you also work?” to give an open-faced smile and say, “I do temporary work in whatever ways I can to earn money for school.”

If anyone asks what kinds of work

(and I doubt they will), her answer would be, “anything from office work to whatever is needed. I pride myself on a variety of skills. School is expensive but it’s worth it.”

To sum up—taking a college course plus volunteer work can significantly reduce an artificial barrier of social position based on how you make your living.

In her case it worked well. The physician was proud of her. He knew that an education was expensive and viewed whatever work she took as a means to an end, not an end itself.

Three notes I added to the woman who wrote me:

—NEVER criticize his friends or say they are snobs, even if they are.

—If he or his friends find out she worked as a maid and offer her a job in their homes, NEVER accept.

—Look, dress, and behave as if she is one of them, and act as if she ‘belongs.’

Real Class

Real Class is a matter of 'behavior' not trappings. Real Class is the art of never

making anyone feel second rate, including yourself. All good manners are built out of the intention to be considerate of the feelings of other people, whatever the class differences may be.

Class as a high quality of behavior includes being comfortable with yourself no matter where you are; and making other people feel comfortable when they are around you.

What this means for you: Tact, diplomacy, tolerance are all part of the qualities you express. You express humor, but never ridicule. Remember, if people look, behave, or dress differently, **as long as what they are**

doing does not physically hurt you, why should you care? You shouldn't.
Just leave them to their choices.

Approach people with appreciation for their differences, and with appreciation their distinctive traditions.

Personally, I think it is best not to make reference to Class at all in conversations. You could accidentally step on your own toes.

Class Can Be Learned

You are not limited to birth class in America. You CAN change your social class. For those individuals who

do not think so, I suggest they research their ancestors and they will find individuals who were poor or uneducated or slaves or indentured servants; but who worked hard and overcame limitations and succeeded. That is the story of all life. **We all descend from Cave Men! Class is learned behavior, period!**

Class identifies you in the way you handle yourself in situations—i.e. that you have ‘classy’ behavior; and most of all, ‘Class’ is the way you treat people and yourself with respect for people in general (you do not ridicule anyone, no matter who else does).

Frankly, some people have a lot of money but trashy behavior; whereas a

few people with little money have a natural classiness in their manner and style that opens doors and allows them to elevate their social level.

That can be you.

Class And Manners

“Learn proper behavior for social situations; but do not try to be ‘too perfect.’ You lose the charm of your distinctive personality if you are too perfect.”

—Ginie Sayles

Keep in mind as you learn this that you never, never, never want to be TOO PERFECT in your behavior because it looks too prim, fake, and self-conscious. PRACTICE when you are alone and in front of a mirror until it feels natural to you.

Then, put it on automatic when you go out. Concentrate on projecting warmth and joy, not on worrying about whether or not you are doing the right thing. By concentrating on projecting a sparkling personality, your practice sessions will pay off in spontaneous behavior. You will not feel self-conscious and when you do not feel self-

conscious, you can enjoy the moment.

No discussion of class and manners is complete without this one: NO CHEWING GUM IN PUBLIC, EVER. Nothing is more déclassé than chewing gum. A male movie star once said he often saw women he thought were beautiful until they put a stick of gum in their mouths.

Not long ago, a young woman was interviewed on television about the death of her husband and the whole time she was teary-eyed, she was also chewing gum.

Chewing gum, like chewing tobacco or dipping snuff is for relaxed private times with friends or alone; but not when you are in public.

Gender And Etiquette

Etiquette is designed to present an orderly way of doing things so that everyone knows what to do in a situation.

One person is designated to lead an occasion simply because if there are two or more people and if they all try to open and enter a door at the same time, or all begin talking to the waiter at the same time, confusion reigns. Knowing a specific procedure is efficient for everyone.

Designations of procedure by gender create an immediate knowledge of what you are to do in a

situation to make it flow more smoothly. Bearing that in mind, you will want to know the following guidelines:

Entering Or Leaving A Limousine Or Automobile

Men: You enter a car after a woman or women. You exit the car first and offer a hand to each woman inside, one at a time, to help her alight from the car more easily.

Women: Allow the door to be opened for you. This is not a sign of helplessness: it is considerate of

the fact that women often have handbags, sometimes fuller skirts to smooth as they get inside, coats on their arms, etcetera.

—Do not enter a car head first, bending into it.

Instead, when the door is opened for you, enter fanny first, onto the car seat and then swing your legs—knees and feet together—into the car.

—Do not straddle one foot in, followed by the other foot unless you are wearing jeans, shorts, or slacks. Even then, it is more graceful to enter fanny first.

To exit: Wait for your driver or

escort to open your door. Extend your hand outside the open car door for the waiting driver or escort to take.

—Exit Knees together and feet together, put both feet on the ground. Lean slightly onto your escort's hand for support, and lift yourself out.

For an SUV or pickup truck—and most wealthy RMs have one or more at their country estates—if you are a woman, your RM or the driver will hold your arm, hand or waist to assist you as you step up onto an outside running board or inside foothold. The same is

true when you exit.

However, if you know you are going to the country, wear jeans, pants, or shorts appropriate to the activities and weather. This makes it easier for you to climb up or to hop down.

How To Arrive And Leave A Hosted Event

Men and Women: If you are invited to a private event, find out the names of the host and hostess from your RM. Or if your RM is attending with you, then be sure you supply their names in advance and tell a little about them,

i.e. “Suzi is a physician, new to our community”

If someone other than the host or hostess answers the door, give your name immediately and state the event you are there to attend.

Have your invitation in hand if the event requires it.

Go first to the host and/or hostess if they are not at the door and make your greetings. They will be near the door if they do not answer it.

Make your comments to the host and hostess very brief and upbeat—just a light, breezy bit of small talk—only seconds—and introduce your RM or be introduced by your RM, if you are with a date.

Do not linger or bring up a full-fledged conversation because the hosts have other guests arriving.

Usually, the hosts will indicate where you are to go next. As soon as they do, go. In some cases, they may lead you to a group or person and deposit you there to get you started into the event so they can return to their welcoming task.

At the end of the event, do not leave without seeking out your host and/or hostess and complimenting something specific about the event and their having given it. Thank them and then leave.

Introductions

Learn to make introductions

effortlessly.

Women and Men: If you are introducing a man to a woman, say the name of the woman first, and look at her: "Jane, I'd like you to meet..(glance at the man)...John Doe."

Then looking at John, say "John, this is Jane Smith." Look back at Jane.

Look at each person as you say that person's name.

If the gentleman is of some prominence—a mayor, a senator, a gentleman of great age, or if it is an employer to a new employee—then you will state his name first, using his title if he has one—i.e. "Mayor Doe, may I present Jane Smith (always

appropriate)." Or "I'd like you to meet Jane Smith" or "This is Jane Smith." If it is a very formal occasion and a much older person or more prominent person, use "May I present"

Whenever you are introduced, there are many acceptable responses, such as "Happy to meet you,"; but the one response considered always appropriate is, "How do you do." If you practice it a few times, you can rattle it off with ease and not sound the least bit pretentious.

Also, learn to introduce yourself with ease by looking a person in the eyes with an expression of delight and say in a forthright voice, "I am Ginie Sayles. What is your name?" (Practice saying

those words with your name, right now, five times)

If you want to extend your hand, do so in a direct manner. For informal occasions, you seem especially warm if you fold your other hand on top of theirs in a double clasp during the handshake.

Men: Always stand for an introduction. You shake hands with any man introduced and with a woman who has offered her hand first.

Restaurants

Learn to handle yourself in fine restaurants, and at dinner.

Men: Be sure your date likes a

particular type of food or the restaurant where you will be taking her. Telephone the restaurant and make reservations, specifying a particular table at that time if you can. Give the date, time, your last name, and how many people will be with you.

Men: Open the door for your date, then stand out of the way to let her pass through the doorway first.

If you wear a hat, remove it as you enter. Men are never to wear a hat inside a building.

Help your date remove her coat. Find out where it is to be checked or carry it for her.

Give your name to the host, hostess, or to the Headwaiter/Maitre

d'hotel (commonly referred to as Maitre d'). State the number of guests you have with you, and confirm the time of your reservations.

If you have a seating preference, put a nice tip in the palm of your hand. Place it in the Headwaiter's hand in a handshake as you make your seating request. Do not make your tip excessive; just nice, according to the caliber of restaurant. Any amount between \$10 to \$30 is probably good for most places.

The Headwaiter controls the dining room and will probably see to it that you are placed with the waiter of top service. Plus, the Headwaiter will likely remember you the next time you dine there.

Women: Let your date take your coat once inside a restaurant.

You follow the restaurant host, hostess, or the maitre d' hotel through the restaurant to the table. Your date follows you. If, for some reason, the Headwaiter does not lead you, then you follow your date to the table.

Stand to the **left** of your chair and allow the Headwaiter or your date to pull out your chair for you.

Sit down briefly on the edge of the chair and then lift slightly. The Headwaiter or your date will scoot the chair under you toward the table. Your date sits to your left.

Men: Seat your date to your right. If there is another woman having dinner with you and your date and she is unescorted, you seat her as well.

You never sit down until every woman in your group is seated.

Men And Women: The minute you are seated, immediately pick up your napkin and unfold it across your lap. Sometimes the Headwaiter will do this for you; but if the Headwaiter does not perform this courtesy, do not wait for him/her to do so, go ahead and put your napkin in your lap once seated.

Women: To avoid confusion, one person commands the dinner. In most

cases, that is your date.

Do not order for yourself. Give your order to your date before the waiter returns. If however the waiter returns before you do so, give your order to your date, looking at your date, not at the waiter. If there is a casual atmosphere about who orders and if the waiter asks you specifically, you can answer. This is not about right and wrong. It is about an orderly procedure, so take your cue from the situation and your date.

If, during the meal there is anything you want, tell your date and let him summon the waiter and order it.

Men and Women: Many fine restaurants do not have prices on the

woman's menu. For a woman, do not ask about it. Simply order what you want.

Men: You can set the price tone by suggesting a particular item or mentioning that it is your choice. If your RM offers to pay for the meal, smile and graciously say, “Well, if you insist, thank you. What items on the menu do you suggest?” Take it in stride with ease and divert attention to something else to make the moment gracious. Never apologize, never refuse (she has more money, remember?), and never make an issue out of it. Accept and move on.

Eating Procedure

Repeat: Napkin first. If your waiter does not open and place your napkin in your lap as soon as you sit down, you do it. Putting your napkin in your lap the minute you are seated is correct. In a fine restaurant, give the waiter a second after seating you to put it in your lap before you do it yourself. But leaving a napkin unfolded on the table until food is served is incorrect. Napkin first.

Taste your food before salting it. Use a napkin every time before drinking from a glass or cup. Just a quick blot.

You may choose your eating style from either the Continental or the American style. Both are proper.

The Continental Style:

The Continental style of eating is done by holding your fork—prongs down—in your left hand and simultaneously holding your knife—cutting blade down—in your right hand—both held over your plate.

Anchor meat with your fork and then cut. After you have cut one bite of meat from the serving on your plate, you immediately lift your fork, which is still in your left hand—prongs down with meat on it—to your mouth and eat it, continuing to hold your knife in your right hand.

You also hold both fork and knife in the position described, waiting, while

you chew and swallow your food. Then you proceed into cutting your next bite.

If you rest during the meal, cross your fork—prongs pointing down—on the bottom left, over your knife to the right bottom, forming an X.

The American Style:

The American style of eating begins the same as the Continental style for cutting meat. Once the meat is cut and is on the fork prongs, you put your knife across the top of your plate—cutting side toward the center of the plate.

Shift your fork from your left hand to your right hand, turning the prongs upward (with the meat still on the prongs) in the process.

Rest your left hand in your lap, lift

your fork to your mouth to take the food. Place your fork in the center of your plate and rest both hands in your lap while you chew.

Once you have swallowed your food, you then cross your left hand over your plate to pick up your fork and begin the process again.

Which Style? Both styles are equally correct. Say nothing about a person's Continental or American eating style preference.

Course Order

A Formal Dinner may have five courses that are served in this order:

First Course: Soup or fruit or

seafood cocktail

Second Course: Fish

Third Course: Meat

Fourth Course: Salad

Fifth Course: Dessert

Variations in these courses are more typical, but you want to know that the order in which they are listed above, is correct.

Silverware

Frequently, the appropriate silver is presented for the course being served and unnecessary silver is removed.

If not, remember that silverware is used in order beginning with the farthest utensil away from either side of

your plate and progressing in toward your plate.

Soup

Sip soup from the side of your spoon and place your spoon on the serving plate when you pause while eating and when finished.

Beverages

Use your napkin every time before drinking anything. If there is no saucer for a spoon, keep your spoon inside your beverage and when you pick it up to drink, use your forefinger to hold it back against the rim, away from your mouth.

Bread And Butter

There are no butter plates used in a formal dinner. Instead, use your upper left side of your plate for butter or bread.

To butter bread, break off a teeny, tiny piece of bread and hold it with one hand, while buttering the teeny piece. Replace your knife, and eat the teeny piece. Never butter a large piece of bread.

Interruptions At Table

Women: If you need to excuse yourself for the ladies' room during a

meal, tell your date so he will stand and come to your chair. If you tell him you are leaving the table and he does not stand and come to your chair, then, of course, handle it yourself.

Men: If your date indicates she wants to leave the table during the meal, you stand if she is in the process of rising when she tells you. If she tells you while she is still seated, stand and come to her chair, pulling it out for her. Go back to your chair when she walks away.

When she returns, stand and again seat her. If, for some reason, she arrives at her chair and begins seating herself before you see her, stand and remain

standing until she is seated. Then sit down.

Standing for your date to rise or to be seated is always in order if she leaves the table during the meal. As to whether or not you help her with her chair depends on your reasonable access to her seating.

Men And Women: Whenever you leave the table during a meal, put your napkin on the table, not on your chair. Lay it to the left of your plate. Replace it in your lap immediately when you return.

Men: If an acquaintance approaches your table, always stand, placing your napkin casually to the left

of your plate.

Greet your acquaintance and shake hands if convenient. Immediately and briefly introduce your acquaintance to your date and then to anyone else at the table.

Remain standing until your acquaintance leaves your table. Reseat yourself, replacing your napkin in your lap.

Women: Remain seated, but stop eating, if an acquaintance approaches your table. If the acquaintance is someone you know but that your date does not know, immediately introduce them. When the person leaves and your date is reseated, resume eating.

Cheese or Fruit or Both

A variety of cheeses—with or without fruit—may be served:

—just before dessert at a seated dinner.

—as the final course itself

—as hors d-oeuvres

—as cocktail party fare

Fingerbowls And Dessert

Men and Women: Fingerbowls, are served on a doily in your dessert plate. It will be placed in front of you, where your plate belongs. You pick up the fingerbowl and doily together and

move them to the left of the plate it is on.

Your dessert silver will be on the plate also. Dessert is most often eaten with a spoon. The dessert fork accompanying the spoon is used to anchor the dessert as you cut it with your spoon.

After dessert, dip your fingers only into your fingerbowl and dry them on your napkin. Try not to call attention to doing this. You can practice using a fingerbowl at home. If you do not have an official fingerbowl, just put a small bowl of water where it would belong on your table for several days and use it until you are comfortable with it.

Leaving A Restaurant

Women: When it is time to leave, your date will return behind your chair. Slightly lift your body and he will pull the chair back somewhat so that when you sit again, you are on the edge. Then lift, and as he pulls the chair again, you stand. Some men offer one hand to a woman just before she stands.

As you stand to leave, place your napkin casually to the left of your plate.

As an orderly procedure, follow your date out of the dining room and allow your date to hold your coat open for you to slip into. If he does not do so automatically, then ask him to hold it open for you.

Men: Return to the back of your date's chair and when she leans forward, slightly pull back her chair for her to stand. You can offer her your hand if you wish, as she starts to stand.

Hold your date's coat open for her to slip into more easily. Lead the way or take her arm and lead the way out of the restaurant.

**Should you try to meet
other RMs when you
are on a date with another
RM?**

Absolutely! Your date tonight may

not be your date next month or even next week! Do not be loyal to someone you may never see again.

Both men and women: If an RM is buying your dinner, keep your perspective. She or he is buying your dinner, not your loyalty. Never flagrantly flirt in front of your date or you look bad to others and embarrass your date; but follow these guidelines to take advantage of the situation to meet other potential dates:

Realize that an expensive restaurant is a location where other potential RMs are. PLUS you—male or female—are more desirable to other RMs when you are with a date.

Definitely be attentive to your date. At the same time, be aware of who else is there. Excuse yourself at least once during the evening for the restroom.

Once you are out of your date's eyeshot, flirt and start conversations with others who appear to be clearly well-heeled. Have a few personal cards with you in a pocket or bag that you can give someone. Ask for theirs. Follow up.

Use this procedure for any upscale event where your RM takes you – a country club social, the theater, horseracing...you get the idea... absolutely everywhere! Just be sure you are out of sight a few times for your private flirting.

Even if you are already dating an

RM and fairly regularly, as long as you are not married, use every opportunity to cultivate more RMs. The day may come when you need new RMs, even if it does not seem so at the moment.

Cocktail And Other Parties

Getting drunk is not a good idea. American author, F. Scott Fitzgerald married a girl of affluence, but he was never able to fit in with her social set because he could not handle alcohol. No one wants to ‘pour you’ into the car, drive you home, and then pour you into your apartment or house. There are times when that is okay on a night out with your friends or even with a trusted date;

but when you are a guest in someone's house or for a cocktail party, sip slowly and mind your charm.

Everyone has a few bad moments in life, but more than that can put a question mark on your social reputation.

Handling Social Differences

Politely honor a person's no smoking or drinking preference, no matter how you feel about it.

And do not be the one to tell crude jokes or to use profanity in a social situation, even if others do.

Expressing Opinions At Social Events

A social event is held for pleasure and very light mental stimulation with interesting companions.

That means it is okay to express an opinion that is different from someone else —occasionally. The main thought to keep in mind is that this is a SOCIAL occasion and not a legal debate.

More people ostracize themselves from friendships and society for this one major breach of social etiquette than for any other.

No one will remember who was right or wrong on an opinion, but they will remember who was rude or pushy

or hostile and will avoid that person.

Refrain from being aggressively opinionated—even if something someone else is saying makes hair stand up on the back of your neck. In such cases, it is best not to say anything, but to move to another group who is talking pleasantly. **Your job as guest** is to be polite to other guests of the host.

In cases where opinions are being stated with friendly differences, you can pleasantly state your position, and stick to it; but be tolerant. Be gracious in social settings. And, although you and I are having straight talk here, it comes off as a little bit "tacky" to carry on too much about money or possessions.

Building Rapport

If you want someone to feel instant rapport with you, just listen closely while the person tells you something.

Then, simply give a SUMMARY of what the person just told you and say it back to the person, beginning with, "Oh, I see, you mean that....."

This is almost magic! It can certainly make you seem charming to an RM's friends and to your RM. You seem to really understand.

Handling An Embarrassing Moment

We all have them. Embarrassing moments happen because we are human. And it is okay to be human. Very okay!

Men and Women: The way to handle an embarrassing moment is to make as little of it as possible. Play down your mistake and the mistakes of others. Ignore whatever you did or did not do and force your mind onto something else. Go on smoothly.

Final Tidbits

Men lead the way down stairs (women often wear high heeled shoes that can easily catch. He blocks her fall).

At the foot of the stairs, he turns and extends his hand to her. She takes his hand as she descends the last few steps.

Men follow a woman up stairs (again, in case he is needed to block her fall). Men also lead the way into dark areas, such as a theater. He walks behind her if an usher leads into a dark area.

Both Men And Women:

Applaud by clapping one hand into the other hand that is cupped and still.

Gum chewing in public is taboo for both men and women in social situations.

PART III

Strategies To Meet The Rich

Where To Find RMs

*“Class with Sass! That is what
creates successful
relationships with the Rich.”*

—Ginie Sayles

Where do you find RMs? Let's look at the problem with giving names of

exact places. The biggest problem is that the places change. By the time the general populace finds where they are and begins going there, the RMs have switched out to another place.

Often, they are in the places that cost the most to be, which is the second problem if you have limited funds.

The third problem is that they frequently go places during seasons and hours that most people do not or cannot go there.

However, a quick list of some specifics can include:

They go where it is warm when the weather is cold and where it is cool when the weather is hot.

They can be found in some

country clubs, but not just any country club.

They attend art auctions and often attend fine estate auctions.

They are at quiet, elegant hotels.

They attend opening nights of major performances.

They can be found at major tennis and golf tournaments.

They often conduct business over breakfast, lunch, formal tea—hence the terms power breakfast, power lunch, power tea.

They patronize some charity events and socialize at those charity fund-raisers or balls.

They are in airports — especially corporate terminals for private planes.

They attend some shareholder meetings.

They own or rent boxes at football games.

They are members of yacht clubs.

They will be at horse races.

They go to high performance car races.

They can easily be found at gambling centers, such as Atlantic City, Las Vegas, Monte Carlo.

They frequent high-ticket political events. And there are wealthy Democrats, Independents, and Republicans.

Now, if you feel depressed about being able to go these places to get to them, remember, they are also at work, if

they work, and in their neighborhoods, at least some of the time.

Neighborhood and work are the two places they are the MOST MEETABLE and COST THE LEAST for you to be there (read chapter on Your Neighborhood).

Shopping with the Rich

Rich men and women typically do not shop during the week-ends and evenings.

That is because Saturdays, Sundays, and week-nights are filled with working class people who are shopping on their days off or on their hours off.

Wealthy people, who control their

own hours, choose the less crowded, week-day hours when they will not have to mingle with the masses or deal with crowds.

They can have more privacy, be around people who are more like themselves. Plus they receive better, unrushed attention from workers.

Men may be able to meet wealthy women who are shopping. Rich women are inclined to make a social occasion of shopping on a week-day. They stop for gourmet coffee or tea in specialty shops, or enjoy lunch in a popular restaurant in the shopping area.

If a man is checking out Rich women who are shopping, he can sometimes find them in the nicer

department store restaurant—such as Neiman-Marcus, Nordstrom, or Saks 5th Avenue.

Restaurants The Rich Frequent

The Rich seldom frequent chain restaurants, such as popular chain steak houses or chain seafood restaurants that you see advertised on television.

True, there are some people with a lot of money who go those places at times; and some of the people are rich; but "The" Rich do not go there for the most part.

The Rich frequent one-of-a-kind specialty restaurants. Many of these restaurants are beautiful, elegant, and VERY expensive.

However, they will go to a nondescript little hole-in-the-wall in a questionable part of town for a specialty food preparation instead of to the slick, commercialized chain that has less quality control than the chains advertise.

Interestingly, the chains they patronize once in awhile are coffee shops, mainly because the coffee shops are open 24 hours. The Rich may go there in the wee hours a time or two after a night on the town, and then give a fair amount of patronage other hours.

Private membership restaurants

and private membership cocktail clubs are part of their status symbol lifestyle, where they get the kind of treatment and recognition they think their money deserves; and where they will be with people of their own ilk.

True, these are places you cannot be admitted unless you get a job as a host or hostess there (which is a great way to do it) or unless you are dating an RM who is a member. When you do date an RM who is a member, get the RM to take you there so you may meet other RMs.

If you get a job there as a host or hostess, rules may prevent employees to come into the club as a date of a member. But who cares? After all, if you

meet an RM there, the RM can take you to many other fine clubs.

The first time you go to expensive restaurants in your city, go for lunch.

It is the same food but it costs a lot less. Plus, you are familiarizing yourself with the menu, the restaurant in general, and the clientele. Many RMs frequent the nicest restaurants for lunch.

Posh restaurants, downtown, surrounded by financial centers or in high rent office complexes attract RMs for lunch. Remember, the Rich will be where the money is and so financial centers and the surrounding restaurants fare well with their patronage.

When you lunch in an expensive restaurant, you can order salad and tea

or water if your "bank balance" is on a diet!

Do not accept a table that is next to the kitchen or tucked away where no one can see you. Place a tip in the Maitre d's hand as you gently insist on the best.

Leave a very nice tip your first time there and you will be seated well after that.

Afternoon Tea

Call the most exclusive hotels in your area and ask if they serve afternoon tea.

Afternoon tea is typically served in a parlor setting with full tea service that includes a teapot, sugar bowl,

creamer filled with milk (milk is preferred over cream for tea; but you can always ask for cream if you prefer it.). If you order Earl Gray Tea do not use milk or cream. Drink it with lemon, or lemon and sugar, or just sugar or straight.

A fine afternoon tea will use loose tea, not a teabag. Loose tea is measured one teaspoon for each person having tea, plus one teaspoon for the pot. It is then steeped in hot water in the teapot for 3 to 5 minutes for peak flavor.

A silver strainer that you place over your cup, when you pour, is part of the tea service.

Tea includes crustless sandwiches with light fillings, scones (in the USA,

we call them biscuits) served with clotted cream (a type of whipped cream, instead of butter), and a beautiful array of delicious pastries and desserts.

When you find a hotel or restaurant in the expensive parts of town or in the business district that serves afternoon tea, go there some week day afternoon.

If you do not know what to do, simply ask the waiter and do not be embarrassed. It is the job of the waiter to serve the tea and to answer any questions that help you enjoy it. You love the gentle pleasure of afternoon tea, and being in a location where you may meet RMs.

I have enjoyed many fine

afternoon teas at different places in the world; but the best I have ever enjoyed was at Whistler in Canada in the Four Seasons. Absolutely scrumptious.

Whereas there are definitely some wealthy men who religiously have afternoon tea for their business meetings instead of three martini lunches; there are quite a lot of wealthy women who have afternoon tea; so in some cases, it can be a nice hunting ground for men and an ‘occasional’ hunting ground for women. This ritual of Afternoon Tea can be ‘regional.’

Happy Hour and Bars

Men and Women: Go to Happy Hour at expensive hotels; and to clubs that are in the best business district of your city. You do not have to drink alcohol. You can have mineral water, coffee, or soft drinks. My favorite non-alcohol drink is club soda with cranberry juice and lime.

But be judicious...if you go to clubs or bars on a regular basis, you lose a little bit of that "special" quality that attracts people to you because you are new and different from the "usual" crowd.

And, if you go too often, people start thinking of you as a lush.

So, if you like going to happy hour every day, I suggest you select several

elegant bars and rotate days and times that you go to each one, so you keep a fresh quality.

Exclusive Clubs

Men and Women: Water and wealth mix—alas, privately. But do not despair. Most rich sailing clubs have professionals on staff.

Professionals are usually allowed to use the facilities to teach nonmembers who take private lessons from them.

This practice is true of tennis clubs, and country clubs as well. Taking lessons is your entree to be seen in these places by the Rich members.

You are on the property of a posh,

private club that costs upward from \$25,000 or more to join; and yet, you are here for your \$35 lesson.

When you are there, look for signs that say "Members Only Beyond This Point." Naturally, you ignore the signs and 'get lost' on the property as you explore it.

Usually, nobody ever says anything to you; but just in case they do, you can claim you are not wearing your contact lenses or you just did not see it, or better yet, you can say that you are considering becoming a member (which is true if you marry one). You can even pretend you got lost on the property and ask directions to the restroom.

Stay confident and openly likable.

The only reason you bother to "get lost" on the property is to meet RMs, so make the time count. Chat with a few people. Just make comments about the day. Get a conversation started. Flirt. Do not linger. Do exchange names and cards.

Sporting Events

For Men and Women:

Professionals are often allowed to invite students to regattas and tournaments. Always go. Attend every single sporting tournament of the best clubs that you can, such as golf tournaments.

If you can get tickets to the pavilion or clubhouse afterward, that is

where a lot of socializing will take place.

If you cannot get a ticket, start quiet conversations with people you meet on the course between plays.

There are hospitality tents at the tournaments that are just like going to a bar. If you are a woman, buy one drink, and speak to a man nearby who is not with a date. He may buy your next drink.

If you are following the players on the course, make quiet talk with a few people of the opposite sex; but watch the golfers.

When you move to the next hole, stand next to someone else. Never seem to be deliberately following anyone, although that is what you are casually

doing with several people. Find out if the people you meet are members of the club or if they have special pavilion passes. Either way, that means they go to the club afterward.

Most people are drinking throughout the tournament and by the 18th hole, they are congenial enough to let you go in as a guest with them, if you ask. And you do have to be gutsy enough to ask in an innocent way.

As the crowd begins surging toward the party areas, you ask, "Where is everyone going?" When you are told, say, "Oh, this is my first tournament. I didn't realize there would be something going on afterward. I would love to go. May I go with you?"

Do not sound pushy. Sound likably innocent (male or female).

Prestigious Art Classes

For men: Take art classes from a highly esteemed local artist. It can be chock full of Rich Women, often widows, trying to fill up their lives.

You can find out who the highly esteemed local artists who give classes are by first visiting an art museum in your city and asking a curator and check out the artist online.

Also ask the names of the best art galleries in your city. Then browse through every one of them, asking the gallery personnel if they know who the

best local artists are who also give classes.

Some of them will just give the name of a friend of theirs who gives art classes, so you will want to ask all the galleries and notice which names emerge time and again.

However, galleries tend to show certain artists, and you are bound to receive some bias, but, still, even if each gallery gives you a different name, that is fine because you are then going to visit the various art supply stores and ask there.

True, you may receive the names of their most frequent customers; but, overall, from these three sources: your local museum of art, art galleries, and

art supply shops, you should have a few names to search online and choose one (or more).

Then, contact the artists, expressing an interest in taking art classes. Ask if you may visit one of their art classes for about 5 minutes. It only takes 5 minutes to see if it is the type of commitment you will be able to make. Every artist I have ever known has been willing to allow that.

However, they get antsy if you stay very long, so leave after a few minutes.

You are only there to determine if the people in the classes are prospects. You will do that by arriving early before class and watching the cars arrive, then

entering the class before it starts and pleasantly introducing yourself to those whose cars or style impressed you as moneyed before you came in.

Notice wedding rings, although some widows wear them. Ask if their husband's like art and a widow will say that her husband is dead.

You can also mention your profession by saying that art is a natural extension of your acting career (or a break from the work you do on inventions/ or you are writing a novel about an artist...etcetera). Then you can casually ask what she does or if she has a particular career?

If you find several women there without specific occupations, enroll!

This can be a Mecca for a man if he hits the right artist.

Both men and women: Get your name and email address on every art gallery list in your city or neighboring city. You will likely be invited to every art showing there is, including private showings because you are on the list. This is where you can meet some deep pocket art enthusiasts.

Alcoholics Anonymous

For men and women: A wealthy chapter of Alcoholics Anonymous will have a few 100 proof millionaires in need of nurturing, understanding, and a

new life. It is more honorable if you are a nondrinker.

Call the center for Alcoholics Anonymous and ask for the chapter nearest you and then give the most prestigious zip code when asked.

When you go, go early so you can wait outside and check out the people who arrive—their cars, their feather, etcetera.

No one has to give a last name or explain why he or she is attending the meeting, so feel free to go in. You may want to come up with a reason, though, in case anyone does happen to ask you. Just give a first name and you can either say that you are interested for personal reasons (true) or that you are doing

research (you might have to produce credentials if you suggest that, though).

You will find the experience interesting and educational. And you will not have to worry about getting to know people. The people there will give their life stories in testimonies and you will know exactly how the problem developed for that person, which gives you a way to be the person's solution.

Now, in other parts of this book, I tell you to be a problem for a person in the relationship. This is the one exception to that advice.

People who are recovering alcoholics need supportiveness. If you cannot give that, do not go.

I do my best to teach you to be a

real asset to an RM's life while keeping you in control of your fate or position in the relationship. I am presuming that you deserve such control and know how to handle it responsibly.

The way to be an asset in this case is to be supportive in accordance with the guidelines that Alcoholics Anonymous gives. It is a great organization.

Incidentally, it has been shown that sometimes love can actually influence a positive recovery in the life of an alcoholic.

Horse Races

There are several types of horse

racing. However, the three you should know are:

Thoroughbred racing
Quarter horse racing
Harness racing

Usually the local newspapers or websites in track towns have tips on which horse they predict to win a race. Download or pick up the paper, along with a racing form, and study it the night before going to the track.

Each type of race attracts different types of spectators, gamblers, and owners. Whichever type you choose may determine the type of people you meet.

For instance, one of the richest purses for quarter horse racing is a race

in New Mexico. There are a lot of cowboy types of people who go there—with or without money. Although here are a number of city people there, too, it is identified mostly as a cowboy race. It can be worth going!

Horse Owners

In any type of horse racing, the owner of the horse is the one who has the money and the owner is often present at races.

Some owners will have both thoroughbred horses and quarter horses; but often you will find they tend to have a distinct following of either thoroughbreds or quarter horses.

Harness race horse owners stick pretty much to harness racing.

Owners are often found in the clubhouse. You can get into the clubhouse of race tracks. You do not have to have a reserved table or assigned seating or box seat.

Walk around and get acquainted. Learn about horse racing, though, because it gives you a natural conversational tool and these people are serious about racing.

Sometimes, owners sit in the Director's private rooms where they place bets and congregate. You cannot get in there, but find out if there is one at that track and where it is. Then, keep your eyes open to see who goes in and

out and be as near as possible, finding something to say in passing.

Racing forms identify the names of the owners and trainers of the horses. Most of the owners will stay at the race unless it is toward the end.

Let's say you see the first race. Watch who goes down to the winner's circle for the photograph or award and then observe those people as they come back into the clubhouse.

Get close. Create a reason to say something. Watch an owner or trainer and notice the people they talk to because those people are probably horse people, too, who are pretty good-sized betters with money. These are people to meet.

Types Of Owners

There is a different breed of owner for each breed of horse racing. In thoroughbred races, you will have more owners who hire trainers

than you will trainer-owners. A lot of trainer-owners will be at the smaller tracks.

In quarter horse racing, you have a mixed bag in the sense that there are those owners who hire trainers; then there are some trainer-owners; and there are big guys and small guys, financially.

The owners whose horses are in the Feature Races—which are the bigger deals—are usually going to be the "bigger guys."

Harness race owners may do it all—own, train, and ride in the race.

Gamblers

In every type of race there will be gamblers from every socioeconomic level placing bets. On a day in, day out basis, though, you will usually find more RMs and celebrities placing bets at thoroughbred tracks than at other types.

Harness racing is often held in the evening and attended as a social event. Social gamblers might take a date to a harness race instead of to the theater. Each track has its racing season and racing days. Attend every type of race, observe RMs and see which ones you

want to pursue.

Gambling Centers

RMs are frequently found in gambling centers. It is easier to meet someone in a gambling situation that has interaction among the gamblers.

Interactive gambling means that people can move in and out of the gambling crowd easily and can interact with each other.

Dice tables (shooting craps) are very popular with large gamblers. There is a lot of emotion at a dice table.

Emotion generates excitement and people fall in love (and get turned on) during excitement more than any other

time. Probably the dice tables are the best places for high interaction.

Some of the games are isolated or do not create much of a social interaction energy.

There are gamblers at blackjack tables; but you do not have as much an opportunity to talk to them at a blackjack table.

Baccarat is normally too isolated unless you are also a baccarat player.

Roulette can be good but it is more staid, normally with a quieter crowd. However, I like it.

In Poker, nobody talks to anybody much.

Slot machine players are involved with their isolation device—the

machine. This is one-on-one. Only a win can generate much interaction.

Polo Clubs

Search the Internet for polo clubs in your area and have them send you information about attending their events. Polo players follow the warm seasons. During the winter, they play in California and Florida.

Wealthy women follow this sport quite a bit; however, each club is a personality unto itself. Some polo clubs are society oriented; some polo clubs are family oriented.

Wealthy members may be in private boxes; however, there may not

be enough private boxes for everyone, so there may be some moneyed members in the grandstands.

Visibility

Learn the art of high visibility.

How many movie stars and stage stars do you know of who married money? That is right. Virtually all of them do. People who position themselves to be seen get to meet RMs.

Star in community theaters, be in pageants, enter talent contests, any competitive event—and be good enough to get noticed! The Rich like, love, and respect high achievers in virtually any category. Be one.

When you can finally afford it,

hire a press agent to promote you and get your name in all the right columns, on all the right invitations. A friend of mine said it was the smartest move she ever made. It helped her end up in the social register.

Put the Odds in Your Favor

The Bureau of Census is published, annually, by the government and is available online at census.gov. By studying the census you can determine the cities that have the greatest numbers of millionaires, and of singles of the sex opposite yours.

Check it out and decide if you can just as easily do what you are doing in

the area with the greatest number of single, opposite-sex millionaires. You can visit during vacation, and if it seems ripe for the picking, locate a job, live there a year, at least, and know you have the odds on your side.

And whereas you may very well walk into a small town and pick up the only single millionaire living there, the chances are greater of you meeting and marrying the Rich in a city.

However, being a small town girl from West Texas, I do know that in its hey-day, Midland, Texas, only 30 miles west of my hometown, was so full of millionaires per capita, that it was almost impossible for a girl not to date a millionaire! Seriously! So, if you want a

small town, at least be sure the statistics bear it out as high in millionaire residents.

Ethnic RMs

Unfortunately, there are still people who contact me, wanting to meet someone Rich in a particular ethnic category, either to please their parents or because they feel more comfortable within a particular ethnic group.

To do so, find the progressive cities with the most concentrated population in that ethnic category. I emphasize a progressive city because you are looking for people within that ethnicity who have found a way to be

financially successful.

You can locate it through the Bureau of Census, published by the government and available online at census.gov or at your local library. Some ethnic groups will be listed as minority groups.

The second thing to do is to get involved with organizations that deal with the business people of that ethnic group. This may include advisory boards for business funding or business management. The advisory boards are generally made up of people with a particular ethnic background who are leaders and who are financially successful.

You should be able to find these

organizations through your Better Business Bureau, Chamber of Commerce, or Junior Chamber of Commerce (Jaycees). Some community college student service centers can direct you to special organizations that network with local ethnic business owners. And, in fact, government funding agencies may be able to tell you how to get in touch with them.

Local and national ethnic websites and e-zines, such as Ebony/Jett, that targets African-Americans, can usually provide information on organizations you seek. Email them through their contact information. Notice the organizations and events they cover.

There are local and national ethnic websites and e-zines for almost all ethnic cultures.

Once you have located your area of operation for ethnic RMs, find the nicer clubs and restaurants and neighborhoods in the ethnic communities and join the organizations that are frequented by those who have been successful.

Then, follow all the rest of the advice in this book, because there really is no difference in people.

Upscale Expos, Conventions

When I was being interviewed for a major international magazine, I asked

the journalist to meet me in the lobby of a 5 star hotel in Houston, Texas where I knew a convention for oil and gas petroleum engineers was in progress all week.

She met me in the lobby and I chose a sofa on the 2nd floor waiting area smack in the center of the meeting rooms and the large tradeshow display area across from us. I told her I had deliberately chosen this setting so she could see what I teach in action regarding where to find RMs.

Throughout our interview, oil and gas petroleum engineers circulated around us, looked at us with interest, and some even asked us a couple of questions. With the slightest bit of eye

contact or friendliness, we would have been invited to lunch or dinner or for a drink or coffee.

The journalist was delighted and easily saw the benefits of this strategy. Not all oil and gas petroleum engineers who attended were Rich...yet; but most of them make a lot of money if they work for a major oil company; and those who go independent may even become Rich. My husband and I know a number of petroleum engineers who started out humbly and ended up very wealthy.

There are expos, conventions, and tradeshowes for high tech Silicon Valley money-makers to physicians, scientists in break-through technology to yachts to just about every genre that exists.

The key is to be there—either working, just attending or circulating close by. Another key to expos, conventions and tradeshow is to be there the very first day or two because that is the day the CEOs and Presidents typically attend and the excitement is high. And remember—excitement stimulates romance.

Gay RMs

An award-winning gay performer had a private consultation with me and I advised he get involved in the wealthy realm of high-end antiques (not just someone's 'used furniture'), and it worked well for him. But there are

opportunities for every sexual preference in most locations.

There are many Gay RMs and this has always been true. Today, society is more accepting than in the past; but it has always been true.

When I worked in Public Relations for an Opera Company, there was a very wealthy gay musician who sometimes worked with us. He was the super wealthy heir of a commodity manufacturer. He had a vast estate and mansion in tony Houston's River Oaks. There he kept a bevy of young gay men, whose expenses were all covered. Some liked the situation, some wanted a committed one-on-one relationship/marriage.

This is no different from non-gay wealth, such as John Paul Getty who kept a bevy of mistresses housed in his European castle.

Some people—straight or gay—want multiples; others want a committed relationship or marriage.

For Gay individuals seeking wealthy Gay RMs, use all the same procedures I have laid out in this book.

21

*Jobs To Meet The
Rich And Super
Rich*

*“Whatever job you have, can
you do the same job
in an industry or location that
brings you into
contact with the Rich.”*

—*Ginie Sayles*

True, the Super Rich today—much like the Super Rich of Newport, Rhode Island in the 1890s—live a cloistered social life. My novel, *Her Secret Life*, takes place during the Super Rich period of the 1890s where castles of the Super Rich still stand today in Newport, Rhode Island as fabulous museums of unbelievably extravagant lifestyles.

No one believed that a Super Rich period of such excess and conspicuous consumption like the 1890s Newport

Gilded Age could ever happen again. But it is happening now and on a global scale – and penetrating it to find an RM to marry is still possible.

The next several chapters will give you some methods that can work, starting with jobs that will bring you into contact with the Rich or the Super Rich.

Yes, there are jobs that let you get paid to meet the Rich — legitimate ones!

In my book, *Rich Sex® The Sexual Dynamics Of Money*, I discuss all types of intimate relationships with Rich men, including wives, fiancées, mistresses, courtesans, et cetera; however, in this book, I only mention those relationships in passing, whereas I emphasize mainstream ‘jobs’

where both men and women can meet Rich Mates (RMs).

Key: Certain industries—the Entertainment Industry and the Financial Industry—are places you can work in the same jobs you now have—but you can meet the Rich in those industries. The same is true for jobs in Rich neighborhoods.

Note 1: Uniforms required for a job are a way to separate you from the Rich and to make it clear you are not one of them. However, there are some Rich individuals who have definitely crossed that line.

Do not rule out those jobs; but at the same time, consider all your possibilities. You want jobs that keep you involved with the Rich. You learn a lot about the Rich for your own understanding for the day you are Rich, too.

Note 2: Some of the jobs are of questionable morality; and I am not advocating any particular job. I simply tell you about them to be truthful. The following jobs or careers have some track record with the Rich.

In alphabetical order, the jobs include:

Art or Antique Dealer or Representative

This is a great career for meeting the Rich and Super Rich. Both the Rich—and especially the Super Rich—spend enormous amounts of money on art and/or antiques.

If you specialize in a particular type of art that you know an RM likes, this can be an ongoing entrée.

If you also speak a second language, you can specialize in the art of the country whose language you know and combine your art or antique knowledge for the country. This would

give you an extra ‘in’ with a Rich buyer.
See translator.

Actor

The trend now is to eliminate gender-based words, such as actress, heroine, authoress, et cetera in favor of having one word refer to both genders—i.e. she is an actor, or she is the female hero, or she is an author, et cetera. I still use both, at times; because I feel as if it eliminates the ‘female’ designation in favor of the male.

My concern is that eventually, the personal pronouns of she and her may be dissolved into him or it, as in some languages that do not value females as an equal gender.

I am aware that the feminist movement (and I count myself as a feminist) may feel that words that delineate gender are biased; but I do not. I think it adds clarity and equality as a female.

At any rate, male or female actors certainly put themselves in the public eye and that, itself, has historically led to some lucrative marriages.

Even on the local level of community theaters that are often supported by the local Rich, you can be seen and sought by them.

There are a number of actors who have been seen by a wealthy ticket holder and later married that person.

If you are an actor, get an agent for television commercials. Television commercials have been the entrée not only for greater acting venues, but also for meeting and marrying the Rich.

Airline Jobs

At one time, being a pilot for an airline was a mainline to a nice level of modest wealth. The pilots were in the 50% tax bracket, which was the highest tax bracket in America and it applied to wealthy people. Today, unfortunately, pilots are paid much less than they were in those golden days of air travel.

Likewise, airline flight attendants

were once strictly the domain for women; and qualifying was almost like entering a beauty pageant. Young women were required to be single, childless, to train in levels of modeling and etiquette. Many of these women married celebrities, movie stars, sports heroes, and socially affluent Rich men. A number of male pilots married Rich women.

Now the job is open for married or single men and women. Airline jobs still have nice perks for both pilots and flight staff, but the money may not be as good as it once was.

Too, the airline pace, demands, and some routes may not be as conducive to maintaining relationships

as you might think. The requirements of being away at odd hours and times can put a strain on the development of relationships.

One possible way to enhance status and money is to eventually become a pilot or a flight attendant for private jets. I once dated an RM who owned a prestigious private jet whose expensive service was used by celebrities and the very wealthy.

Without a doubt, the male or female flight attendants on these flights met some of the Richest people in the world. And, if you work as a private pilot or attendant for privately owned jets by individual RMs, you develop an ongoing contact with each other. If you

are polylingual, you demand more respect, higher salary, and become indispensable for an RM.

A number of foreign airlines still maintain females and a beauty pageant standard for their flight attendants.

Artists

Painters, sculptors, potters, and other creative pursuits will be as effective as the publicity their work; or as effective as the gallery or representation they have. An artist can advertise for a patron; or can visit an RM who supports art and seek funding for your work.

One clever man struggled for

years as an artist. Giving up on his own success, he became involved in the city's art museum.

There, he met the wife of a Super Rich man. She was a nice looking woman in her fifties, who devoted to art and spent great amounts of time (and enormous amounts of money) with the museum.

Her husband, also in his fifties, had multiple international businesses and traveled more than he was at home. She often joined him for a week or two in his travels; but her involvement with the museum was as important to her his career was to him so she was more often at home to fulfill commitments to the museum.

There she met the humble artist. There were not a lot of men as involved in the museum as she was until she met him. Their mutual love of art soon developed into a strong attraction and eventually a serious love affair.

Over the next two years, she was the happiest she had been in a long time. She had a man in her life who valued her work with the museum. She, in turn, began to promote his art and gave private showings for him in her home. She talked about him to her media connections and got attention for his art; and with her influence, he was beginning to make substantial money with sales of his paintings.

Unfortunately, she did not want to

leave her paramour artist to accompany her husband on his trips, anymore. When her husband finally insisted, she cut the trip short to return home, and her husband became suspicious. He hired a detective and learned the truth.

One afternoon as his wife and the artist were making love in the master bedroom of their mansion that overlooked the sumptuous garden, her husband who was supposed to be out of town, threw a wrought iron chair through the master bedroom window where he saw them together.

After smashing the window, he came through the glass splinters and confronted them. There was quite a scandal but the artist came out of it quite

well.

Architect

I met a beautiful woman architect, who had risen above many other architects by specializing in a new concept that she had designed and had peddled her unique designs to CEOs of companies whose images she thought could be enhanced in buildings she designed.

It not only worked for her, but she met and dated a number of the RMs she met while promoting her designs; and she was even seen with a celebrity athlete at an important social event.

Architecture can be hard for

making money; but it has a nice cache and is a well-respected profession.

Assistant

Personal assistants for the Rich can do quite well. The main reason is that an RM develops a level of dependence on you. Never tolerate verbal abuse from an RM employer—never—because you will lose value to the RM (and to yourself).

However, if that is not an issue, work your buns off to do a first rate job as the RM's personal assistant, which will create respect from the RM.

You will also meet other RMs who work with or are friends with your

RM employer. One of these RMs may be in the market for marriage or a fulfilling relationship.

Au Pair, Babysitter, Nanny Jobs

There are enough au pairs and nannies who have ended up replacing the Super Rich wife that it is worth considering.

Technically, an au pair is a young person from another country who lives with a foreign family to learn the language and takes care of the children in exchange for room and board. A nanny is employed full-time to care for a family's children and often lives with the

family, although the nanny may live elsewhere.

The drawbacks of this job is that it can tie you down to a relationship with someone other than the RM.

And I have known live-in nannies who took insults and verbal abuse. An au pair or nanny is often considered to be too much in service to them.

As a nanny, you interact with the parents from time to time and in doing so, you may end up in a personal relationship with the Rich father.

Movie star fathers have divorced their wives to marry their children's nannies. Famous political giants have fallen in love with their children's nannies.

When I was in college, one of my professors from an affluent family divorced his wife and married their part-time nanny.

One of my daughter's best friends watched her divorced Rich father fall under the spell of his daughter's nanny (only a few years older than his daughter) and he married her.

If you are an au pair or nanny, you can speak directly to the father of the children, ask him to give you a ride home, et cetera. And if he is already divorced or is a widower, you have a natural venue to his heart.

Keep any romantic relationship you have with the child's parent secret

from the child or children until the knot is legally tied in matrimony. Until then, your romance can be destroyed by opposition from a wife who is being divorced or by objecting grandparents.

And let this be a warning to you: If you are a woman and you marry an RM and then have children:

—**Be sure your husband does not drive a young nanny or babysitter home.**

—**Be sure he does not visit your children's room while the young nanny is there.**

—**Be sure he have a private discussion about the children with a live-in au pair or young nanny without you.**

—As wife, you and you alone should deal with the nanny or au pair. Never seem threatened about it; just insist that one parent, the mother (you) should be the sole contact for consistency.

As wife, remember that if you have a young au pair or nanny, any innocent excursions by your RM to visit the child with the nanny or to discuss the child with the nanny can build a bond between them that grows into more. Be smart.

As an RM's wife, hire an older grandmotherly nanny for the children. You may be able to get around age discrimination by stating that the children relate to grandmotherly types.

Bartender

Bartenders at private clubs or for private parties can meet the Rich. At private parties in the homes of the Rich, this can go either way; but in private clubs, you will tend to get to know some of the RMs who frequent the club.

True, there may be employment rules by the club that you are not to date members; but what the club does not know won't hurt anyone—and once your relationship with an RM who is a member gets serious, you can resign.

If the relationship does not work out, you can always get another bartending job at another private club or

upscale bar.

As I understand it, Movie star, Matt Damon, met his wife when she was a bartender at a Miami bar where his film crew went for drinks after a shoot.

Broker

The role of ‘middle man/woman’ for any kind of sales can bring you in contact with the Rich. You can also make good money. It is especially important that a man or woman who wants one of these positions utilize the makeovers I have discussed previously and to look really sharp and perfectly groomed.

Outside Sales for Luxury Hotels
Brokering jewels to jewelry stores or buyers

Real estate

Stockmarket (see financial careers)

Expensive horses to buyers

Yachts

Casinos

One of my clients met a number of RMs when she worked the blackjack table of a private casino for RMs.

Cocktail hostesses, table photographers, musicians, and such, might do quite well working for casinos. Be very careful of your associates, however, so that you are not sucked into a drug scene.

Chauffeur

This job **rarely** becomes romantic; however, one ex-wife of a famous movie star married her chauffeur. Certainly some wealthy women will cross the line of service personnel to marry; but many more of them will limit their involvement to a toasty affair.

For men, it may be best not to actually "work for" a Rich woman in a service job that requires a uniform, unless she is the corporate executive/entrepreneur type.

Concierge

I had a client who took a job as a

conciierge for a five-star hotel in Canada and she ended up marrying a Rich man from America she met while he was staying in that hotel on business.

This particular American RM inquired at the conciierge desk about local services, found the conciierge to be charming and asked her out when she finished work for the day. It was a great job for her to meet men of means, one of whom became her husband

Many men and women on a business trip seek a conciierge to get information about local entertainment, restaurants, and hotel services.

Chef

This is an important position and with good pay. A chef once said on television that he used my book to find the Rich where he could apply for jobs. It seems he was more interested in finding them for work than for marriage, which is just fine, too.

But a male or female chef could step into position of spouse for an RM. I had a beautiful young female student in my seminar who was a chef and was also interested in marriage to the Rich.

Whether or not that has happened, I do not know but the title of Chef is very respectable. The one reservation that might happen is if a misguided RM thinks it is just the same as a cook. Technically, a Chef is the ‘chief cook’

and has other cooks working under her/him.

Companion

This position is good for several reasons; but the key reason is that the RM becomes dependent on a personal companion.

A number of wealthy widows hire live-in companions who also travel with them. In some respects, it is a little like having a personal maid because you are called on to ‘get this’ or ‘get that’ for the RM and may be called upon to help them dress or undress, and frequently to drive the car when there is no chauffeur.

Companions may be expected to keep the RM's life organized with schedules noted in a calendar.

But this not always the case. Even if it is, the demands are usually light and more like something the RM would ask of a mate.

It is, of course, advisable that at the time of hiring, your exact duties are made clear and defined in your contract. This should also include duties you are not expected to do. It is just as important to have those defined as well.

The nice difference between a maid and a companion is that a companion is typically expected to have meals with the RM, unless the RM is expecting guests. A companion goes

shopping with the RM and is often a companion will have daily afternoon tea and conversation with the RM, like a personal friend. You will attend operas, ballets, concerts, and restaurants with your RM in the absence of the RM's regular friends; so the RM will not have to go alone. And when the RM is feeling conversant, you will provide companionable talk.

Cruise Lines

A man who worked on cruise lines told me all the men employees were issued a stash of condoms and told to be sure the women—married or single—had a good time. He said they were

told that women want a shipboard romance to remember from their cruise, even if it is with a waiter.

Certainly, if a genuine attraction with a Rich woman occurs, the relationship may last beyond the cruise.

One of my wealthy consultation clients told me that when she sailed the QE2 for a year, that all ticket holders on the ship were wealthy. She said that many of the Rich men wanted marriage as much as the Rich women and felt they would be marrying a financial equal.

She also said that by the end of the year's cruise, she had had three proposals. Unfortunately, the QE2 has been retired from the seas; but there are cruise lines that cater to the Rich. And,

of course, jobs for private cruise ships or private yachts can yield contact that can generate interest between you and an RM.

Dancers

Many Rich people support ballet and if you are a ballet dancer, hired by a ballet company, you stand a chance of meeting RMs who support the company. Sometimes, there are private socials after a performance for the Rich supporters to meet the performers.

And there are dance instructors whose dance studios include the children of wealthy families or Rich adults or athletes who take lessons for a

physical workout or to develop a deeper understanding of the art.

If you have a dance studio in a major city with a sports team, consider approaching the team for lessons. One NFL star player took ballet to enhance his strength with new moves for agility. Exotic dancers are listed under E

Dental Centers

Female dentists and orthodontists are on the rise. Not only can you make good money, yourself, as a dentist, but you can set up your practice in a well-to-do neighborhood and promote your work to the affluent.

Dental Assistants for respected dentists often meet Rich patients and work with them regarding dental hygiene. And some of them marry a successful dentist. But it is not just the dental assistant who will meet them, receptionists for a successful dentist can also meet them.

Do you remember the infamous murder case of Clara Harris, a woman dentist who killed her husband, David Lynn Harris, an orthodontist by driving her Mercedes over him, over and over, because he had fallen in love with a receptionist who worked at one of the dental chains he and his wife jointly owned.

Education

If you are still getting an education, find a way to attend exclusive private schools (scholarships can get you in, if needed); and you will meet Rich and Super Rich heirs.

One very Rich man told me he knew that when he attained his degrees through Harvard and Oxford that he knew he had it made for the rest of his life because of the important friends-in-high-places connections he had made.

My brother, Lefty Morris, visited two of his friends who were students at TCU in Fort Worth, Texas. TCU (Texas Christian University) is an upscale private university with a number of students from wealthy families.

It changed his life. He felt there was a different ‘class’ of student than where he was going to school at the time. He transferred to TCU and on the day he left, he hitched a ride with his friends and only had \$10 in his pocket. Dad warned him it was too expensive; but Lefty told him not to worry.

When he got to TCU, he worked 3 jobs, pledged Delta Tau Delta, became president of the pledges and eventually president of the fraternity, and he made the Dean’s List. He always maintained the ‘inside education’ of going to TCU taught him how to move into higher social circles with ease the rest of his life; and the friends he made there were valuable in his future as a lawyer.

Exotic Dancers

The movie, *Lady Hamilton*, is the True Story of a poor English girl who worked her way up the seamy side of England as an exotic dancer.

Enchanted by her grace, a Lord married her and even tolerated her notorious affair with one of Britain's great war heroes, Horatio Nelson.

On the other side of the coin, one very beautiful exotic dancer in today's world divorced her husband for a wealthy man who later told her, his interest in her was purely sex and nothing more. So, it can go either way, just as any other job can.

Finance-Related Jobs

Clearly, the Rich will be wherever money is—and the center for money and the American Industry is the stock market. Therefore, jobs as a CPA (certified public accountant), in stockbrokerage firms, commodity firms, real estate, some banks, some insurance, and other financial institutions attract the rich.

I unashamedly admit that the deciding factor to becoming a stockbroker was to meet wealthy men as potential marriage material.

Wealthy women and men have to

do something responsible with their money if they want to stay wealthy, so they seek investments. Too, the profile of wealthy men shows that many of them are gamblers at heart and carry the gambling instinct into investing in Options.

Jobs related to investment give both women and men a legitimate excuse to telephone someone wealthy out of the blue — which is known as a cold call — to introduce yourself, and to suggest getting together for financial planning.

Your best bet IS cold calling for financial institutions and following up with a visit.

There are many stockbrokers who read obituaries for the deaths of wealthy

men and immediately contact the widows to offer their services.

The office manager of one of brokerage firms where I worked made his fortune doing exactly that. He knew the widows were vulnerable and confused about what to do with the money their husbands' had earned and left to them.

A female friend of mine married a stockbroker who called her the day the obituary came out. He set an appointment to visit her in her home the day after the funeral. She told me, "Ginie, my greatest fear was what to do with the money. This man stepped in and explained everything to me very carefully and guided me with

compassion and sincerity. He made my money grow. I was so grateful to him and I needed him that it is not surprising that I also fell in love with him.”

I know there are scam artists in the financial field; but there are ‘some’ ethical ones, too. We are taught prudent care for clients. Many brokers do not follow that principle, as they should; but those who do deserve to be valued. And you can make money through your own investments, too.

Not only can brokers meet the Rich; but receptionists and secretaries can also meet Rich clients who come to the office. I have seen this happen many times. The receptionist is typically the first person the RM meets when visiting

the firm.

If you become a Series 7 Licensed Stockbroker, as I was, I suggest you ‘specialize’ in a particular area that can put you face-to-face with RMs.

For example, many companies still offer pension and profit plans. CEOs of the company will have to be involved with you as you set it up for them. It can be quite lucrative for you, too.

Also, if you specialize in taking a company public, there is a lot of money to be made and once again, you are dealing directly with the top echelon of the companies.

There are a number of finance-related jobs. Be sure to check out the

validity of the company to be sure it has good standing.

Fund Raiser

Fundraisers for charities and foundations will undoubtedly meet Rich and Super Rich donors. If you are good this job, you will be prized by the organization and frequently invited to the main social events the RM donors attend.

An ambitious woman from a humble background got involved in the opera as a fund-raiser. I doubt she knew a soprano from a tenor in the beginning; but she had the spunk to volunteer on the fund-raising committee.

And she was smart. She asked for the list of ‘former contributors’ who had dropped out of donating to the opera. From the list, she chose a super-wealthy businessman, twenty-two years older than she—and he was in the process of a divorce, just as she was.

He only donated a small amount to the opera, but he asked her to dinner.

Six months after they met, they married and moved into a 28-room mansion in the most exclusive neighborhood in the city, along with separate quarters for live-in cooks, maids, chauffeurs and gardeners. The RM gave her \$5000 a month and credit cards to use. He lavished her with jewelry and designer clothing. The

couple kept a convoy of luxury cars and enjoyed a busy social life. And she enjoyed this all because she had the smarts to volunteer as a fund raiser for the opera. And, of course, this can be applied as a fundraiser for any charitable organization that supports the arts or advanced scientific research, such as cancer.

Gardener/Landscape Designer

This position can go either way—affair or marriage, depending on the open-mindedness of the RM.

A gardener can ‘repackage’ his/her title as a Landscape Designer or

Landscape Architect and have a greater possibility of marriage to an RM, while you build your business.

Geologist

Geologists who are involved in oil and gas often mix and mingle with RMs in the world energy business. I have had women clients who were geologists and either dating or divorced from an RM as well as making good money in the process. Men still dominate this industry but it is changing.

Gemologist

Knowing how to assess stones and to buy them can be a nice career, especially if you work for a fine jeweler or for an insurance company that insures fine jewelry; and if you hire your services to individual wealthy clients.

Glamour-Related Jobs

Glamour jobs for women include:

Modeling

Stage or Film Acting

Television Commercials.

Singers

Dancers

Performers of almost any type have an element of glamour. The glamour grows as their publicity grows.

The Rich are publicity hounds, although they pretend they are not.

Male glamour jobs include television commercial actors, special fund raisers for big community projects, handling expensive art auctions, stage or film actors, athletes, community television personalities—weather, sports, news, talk shows.

Glamour jobs for men can also include writers, sculptors, inventors. Men can even pretend to be an undiscovered artist, actor, writer, genius, or scientist to a wealthy woman he meets through a related charity. That makes him someone who is a natural extension of her own social interests. She wants to be a patron. It fulfills a mothering role

for her. BE her protégé.

Hairstylist

A hairstylist who will go to the office or home of executives can develop a select clientele of wealthy individuals. There are celebrities who have fallen in love with their stylists and married them.

High Profile Jobs

High Profile Careers. Models (men and women models), actors,

actresses, pageant winners, talented singers, dancers and performers (classical pianists and opera singers). You must be "seen."

You can hire a publicist to get your name and picture known. One woman told me that hiring a publicist was the smarting thing she ever did. Another woman paid agents of movie stars to take her on dates where they would be photographed and their pictures would be in news shots. She did this to make an RM jealous and it worked. They married.

Any job that puts you in the public eye—an actor at a local theater or a swimsuit or lingerie model for **legitimate catalogs** give you a

glamorous aura that attracts the Rich.

When I say a legitimate catalog, I mean a lingerie company whose stores you would find selling lingerie in stores in a mall. Be careful about ads for lingerie models and it turns out to be a trashy enterprise that exploits young girls or women.

High publicity positions can include directorship positions for non-profit arts organizations, theatres. Usually, these positions are not that well salaried but the women you can meet who are dedicated patrons are often quite, quite wealthy.

If you are willing to settle for an affair, you and your company can benefit. If you want marriage, you can

usually find someone in the ranks to marry.

Hostess

Hostess jobs in fine restaurants and clubs rate well for women to meet RMs. When I was teaching high school, I worked nights as hostess for a super posh restaurant. It was required that I dress up in dressy cocktail or long gowns, and to look good since I would be greeting the wealthy people arriving for dinner.

As a hostess, I met a number of wealthy men who asked me out. Another woman who also was hostess there with me was a woman in law school. We

used to joke that meeting Rich men on our job was like “a bird’s nest on the ground.”

Insurance

If you can specialize in insurance for jewelry, yachts, and other trinkets and toys of the Rich, you can be valuable to the protection of their assets and meet them for that purpose.

Journalism

Journalism is THE very best career for meeting an RM. You can always stage an interview for a story

with an RM of tremendous power. You may even end up sharing the limelight of the RM's power. Our country had a First Lady who was previously in journalism — Jackie Bouvier Kennedy...later Jackie Onassis.

Be smart and interview your Super Rich RM on a particular charity that person has founded or a pet project or sport that person supports.

For example, an Super Rich person may buy a hockey team. Interviewing the RM about the purchase and later follow-up articles about the team should get you on a first name basis with the RM.

And it is especially smart if the RM founded a Charity. Believe me, this

RM will take every opportunity to expand awareness of the fine work the Charity provides. Again, if you have follow-up articles, you will be endeared by the RM.

Ernest Hemingway was married and living on the Florida Keyes when he was interviewed by a female journalist. He divorced his then wife and married the journalist, settling in Cuba for a time.

If you are not a journalist, you can certainly ‘fake’ it—and today, with Blogging as a legitimate form of journalism, you can honestly state that you are an online journalist.

Many women have pretended they were journalists, got an interview with an RM and ended up married to the RM.

One of my students in California did this. She read about a wealthy man in Palm Springs, called his office and set up an appointment for an interview and ended up marrying him. One of my students reported to me this worked for her to meet and date an NBA (national basketball association) player.

Lawyers

Just because you are a lawyer (or a doctor) does not mean you are making money. The title, however, can give you entree to meeting RMs. A male lawyer, with or without money, can meet debutantes as well as social Grande Dames now in widowhood, just from his

title alone.

A female lawyer should be open to RMs of various categories. I have known 3 male RMs who were ‘diamonds in the rough,’ so to speak and they tend to like women who have a higher level of education than they. One male RM finished high school and made a fortune in the blue collar industry and married a female lawyer. Another RM did not finish high school, but started out selling tee shirts and made so much money, he expanded into several lucrative companies. He, too, admired women attorneys. A celebrity RM, whose education was interrupted when he was young, preened in the education of his lawyer wife. It is a case of

opposites attract.

These men offered their well-educated wives a level of money the wives were not likely to make in their careers as lawyers. The legal eagle wives offered the RMs a connection to the educations they regret not having but no longer have the time to pursue.

In fact, numerous male CPAs, stockbrokers, realtors, lawyers and physicians are ambitious individuals who want to marry money for the silk stocking trade it brings them.

If you are a lawyer, consider specializing in a practice that brings you into contact with wealthy women and men – such as Securities Law, where

you are hired by the Rich to take their companies public.

Life Guard

Females and males can be life guards. And, if you are going to be a life guard, you may as well be one for the Richest clubs or most exclusive beaches.

Wealthy women have definitely sought exciting relationships with life guards. If the job is temporary because you are going to school, it may blossom beyond the summer. Women, too, can be life guards and the same rules apply.

Maid or Housekeeper

There are enough maids and housekeepers who have married money that it should be mentioned; but it should also be mentioned that there are more maids and housekeepers who have not married money. Housekeepers usually oversee the maids and have a higher household standing.

An RM in the middle of a divorce moved into an apartment and placed an ad for a housekeeper/cook/maid. He hired one of the women who responded to his ad and ten months later, when his divorce was final, he married her.

Makeup Artist

A makeup artist in the entertainment industry can often have a steady client base and meet high-powered celebrities.

A number of movie stars have fallen in love and married their makeup artists—two celebrity stars have married their makeup artists: Dick Van Dyke and Michael Landon Sr (*Little House On The Prairie, etc.*) both married their makeup artists.

Being ‘kept’ by an RM can have great benefits, too. Two makeup artists I know (but they did not know each other) had affairs with wealthy married men. In both cases, the RMs set up the women in her studios to sell their own line of

cosmetics.

Both of these women became very successful in their own right. And both women ended up financially better off than they would have without the RMs' help. If this is your career, work your way into high-end clientele.

Manicurist

A manicurist who specializes in office visit manicures for CEOs can make easier in-roads into meeting and dating RMs than those who wait for someone to walk into the office.

Of course, it can happen that way if the manicurist is aligned with a

respected hairstylist whose salon is in the lobby of an office building where the businessmen and businesswomen can easily call down for someone to be sent up or who will drop by the salon at an appointed time.

Massage Therapist

Masseur —pronounced: **Mah-Sir**

Masseuse—pronounced **Mah-Sirs**

Masseur and Masseuse are two of the most mispronounced words. This is how the words are correctly pronounced:

A male massage specialist is a

Masseur, pronounced Mah-Sir—**NOT**
mah-sewer

A female massage specialist is a
Masseuse, pronounced Mah-Sirs—**NOT**
mah-soose (like moose)

Always think of LeSeur Peas,
which are pronounced La-Sir, exactly
like masseur is pronounced.

You do not need to correct other
people (unless they work for you); but
be sure you pronounce it, correctly.
Some wealthy people even say it wrong,
as do most television reporters and even
some television ads.

But YOU can say it correctly and
believe me, there are those who DO
know the difference and they will be
impressed that you to, too.

If someone (even an RM) thinks you are saying it the wrong way, just cheerfully say, “No, my pronunciation is correct; but it is fine for you to say it the way you do. It is in common usage that way.”

And let it go. But stick with the correct way of saying it, no matter what others do.

Models

Male or female models rate very high for RM appeal. Even if you no longer model, an RM will usually find a way to mention that you were a model at one time. I dated a lawyer in Dallas who always mentioned to his friends that I

had been a model, although I had not modeled for years.

Almost any type of modeling impresses an RM of either sex. Over time, certain types of modeling have had a greater impact.

Lingerie models for reputable lingerie firms (such as Victoria's Secret) and swimsuit models definitely have RM appeal. No two ways about it.

The nude centerfold picture of Senator Scott Brown of Massachusetts that appeared in Cosmopolitan magazine when he was a law student has probably reaped more votes for him than his political views.

For all the talk about immorality, I have never seen a centerfold model

whose romantic life was ruined by the nude photographs.

Live nude models for artists are considered 'respectable' in most Rich quarters. Movie star Charlton Heston and his wife both modeled nude (in the raw) for artists when they were young, newly married, and earning a living.

Nurse

Nurses have fared quite well in developing relationships through private care. Some women have become nurses in order to meet and marry a doctor. Smart thinking in a lot of ways; however, many nurses do not marry doctors.

As a nurse, you want to choose

your health care facilities carefully so that you are in the hospitals the Rich frequent.

One of my favorite true stories is that of a woman who married a man she loved. Unfortunately, he had difficulties keeping a job and they ended up moving from one town to another, barely scraping by. In the meantime, they had four children. She wanted to work but childcare would cost more than she could make and she would not be able to stick with any job because her husband would lose his within weeks or months on a new job and move them again.

This pattern went on until finally all four children were in grade school. They moved to another state (again) and

this time, she told her husband that during the hours the children were all in school, she was going work as a nurse's aid while she pursued a nursing certificate. Since his new job seemed to be going well, he agreed to her plan.

The only entry-level job as a nurse's aid was for a night shift and she eagerly took it. The hospital was the most prestigious in the city and the one where the wealthiest people went when they were ill.

She enjoyed the atmosphere there and for the first time in her adult life, she knew she had an income—albeit a small income—that she could count on. That is, until her husband lost his job and said they needed to move again.

This time, she put her foot down. “We are not uprooting the children, anymore,” she said, “They are in school and have a home and are making friends. If you cannot get another job in this city, you will have to go without us because I am staying with my job and keeping the children in school here.”

Her husband acquiesced and over the next couple of years, he found work that usually only lasted a few months.

In the meantime, still working the night shift, she made her rounds to check on patients for the head nurse and met a new patient.

The new patient was a middle-aged man from one of the wealthiest families in the state and he was in the

process of a divorce he really did not want. As he said to her, one evening, he had been married since his early twenties and he was used to being married. He dreaded facing life alone as a single man.

During the two weeks he was in the hospital, he looked forward to her nighttime rounds and always asked her to take a few minutes when she was finished to come back and talk to him. As they exchanged stories, he learned of her unhappy marriage.

One night, he said, “I think you and I can help each other. I believe we both want a good marriage we can count on. If you file for divorce, I think it can be final by the time my divorce is final. I

want to marry you and give a good life to you and your four children.”

She said yes, divorced her husband and married this very Rich man. Her children grew up in a fabulous mansion, wearing the best clothes, having the best opportunities, and attending all the right schools. Her life went from desperate to wealthy because she took a job in the right hospital.

In recent times, an online news source reported a medical facility as compiling a list of Rich or famous people who would be assured of receiving top quality treatment during their medical visits. There are hospitals the Rich favor for such treatment.

Private care can get you inside the

mansions; but it is a health-sitter situation that may or may not get you anywhere. However, when someone is dependent upon your care, they tend to begin caring back.

Pageants

Pageant men and women learn how to groom themselves, how to present themselves, how to ace an interview, and how to stand out from others. These same skills give them an advantage to meet, to date, or to marry the Rich. Still other pageant contestants became rather famous themselves. An impressive list of successful women who started out in pageants includes

Oprah Winfrey.

One pageant girl married a man who became one of the richest people in the country. After thirty years of marriage, they divorced, and her ex husband married a woman who had also been a pageant winner when she was younger.

Pageants remain a great training ground for both men and women. In my book, *How To WIN Pageants*, I interviewed both male and female winners.

Paralegal

A paralegal is a legal assistant for a lawyer or lawyers in a law firm. The

paralegals are trained extensively in legal matters and lawyers are quite dependent on their paralegals. Many of them know about as much as the lawyers they work for; and some paralegals go on to become lawyers themselves.

The nice thing about a job as a paralegal is that you are working with lawyers who have already made a name for themselves and attained a growing level of wealth; or you are working with lawyers who have a promising future – and best of all, you are meeting wealthy clients who come to the office to meet with their lawyers.

Personal Assistant

Being a personal assistant can make you indispensable and can lead from personal assistant to personal relationship. Look into the Association of Personal Assistants.

Physician/Personal Physician

Today, Personal Physicians are gaining popularity among the very wealthy. This is a physician who is put on ‘retainer’—a high salary to exclusively retain the doctor’s services on-call day or night, year-round.

Some new physicians who have not yet developed a patient network or

who older physicians who have retired, may find it financially helpful to work exclusively for a Rich family as their private, on-call, round-the-clock doctor.

You may or may not want this as your entrée to relationships with the Rich. In one respect, they may see you as a glorified servant. On the other hand, their dependence on you gives you a walk-on role in their lives and a way to meet other members of their family and sometimes their friends who may be on hand. These connections may lead to a personal relationship with you.

Private Clubs

Jobs at exclusive Private Clubs –

even just working at the counter in the Golf Shop or Tennis Shop or Sailing Shop puts you in contact with the members and they get to know you.

Protestant Priests/Ministers

Vows of poverty aside, single ministers and Episcopal priests can easily slip beyond the role of comforter into husband to wealthy widows.

When I was single, I wrote a few articles for a singles magazine in Dallas. For one of my articles, I interviewed an Episcopal priest—and his story was

very interesting.

It seems he had been a Catholic priest on a cruise ship that catered to the wealthy. While on one cruise, a wealthy woman sought his consolation and a relationship developed.

They decided to marry and he became an Episcopal priest...and a rather wealthy Episcopal priest at that! I like him as a person and do not judge him. My point is that a protestant minister can work that same magic. Consoling wealthy women can lead to deeper love and even marriage.

Public Relations

Public Relations—PR—jobs can

be great if it is with a company that keeps you involved with the Rich. Performing arts and charities do not pay much; but the perks can be fantastic.

When I was public relations for an opera company, I had to be involved in all phases of consulting with advertisers to be sure what they wrote would have a positive effect on the company. I also had to be involved in any social event involving the opera, which meant I was mixing and mingling with some of the Richest people in the country as they planned the opera gala or the opera ball or a fund raiser, or socials for the opera itself.

I was courted by the heir of one of the most famous department stores in the

country; and it was my PR job that brought me in direct contact with him.

Another woman who was PR for a major department store was required to attend a spring event for the store's best customers. There she met the fabulously wealthy owner of a national landscape company. They married and enjoyed a global social life. They had homes in several countries, including a sumptuous villa in Italy.

Receptionist

Receptionists are the image of the company where they work because they are the first person visitors see and the first voice callers hear. They do nothing

but greet people and answer telephone calls. They do not type, file, or handle anything other than scheduling appointments, changing appointments, answer calls, and welcome people. True, some smaller firms have their secretaries double as ‘receptionist/secretary’—but the larger, nicer firms do not do that.

This can be an excellent job for a woman to meet and/or marry Rich men if she chooses an important, large firm.

A wife who was widowed at age 43 and still had a child at home, went to work as a receptionist for an oil company in the Petroleum Building. She had been there two years when an oil man’s wife died. Within a few months of

his wife's death, he began dating the middle-aged receptionist, who was fairly close in age to his late wife.

Three months into their relationship, he was on a business flight to the middle-east when he cut his trip short, canceled his business appointment and flew back to ask the receptionist to marry him.

Unfortunately, he told his adult children of his plans to marry again — and his children were so upset that he was so quickly 'replacing' their mother that they insisted he delay the.

He should have gotten married first and then announced to the children that he IS married—then the children would have had to accept it and it is

none of their business anyway.

But he did and he let their ‘being upset’ affect his plans. So to let his children become used to the idea; the RM and his receptionist became ‘engaged.’

Two years later, when the bloom was off the rose, so to speak, he met a woman while he was on a trip to Dallas and he up and married her (he had learned not tell the children this time until after the deed was done.

Well, the receptionist was now 47 but she was working in the right place because a few years later, she met another widowed oil man. He was engaged to another widow at the time but the day he met the receptionist, he then

broke his engagement to his fiancée. Within a few months he married our widowed receptionist who was now 53 years old.

Resorts

Jobs in exclusive resorts can definitely bring RMs into your life and may make them aware of you. It is very smart to work, even temporarily, at one of the top resorts during ‘season.’

Ski resorts are a good place to meet the Rich. Jobs as a ski instructor or a bartender will bring you into contact with them.

School teachers who have summer vacations or students who have

certain semesters off can find jobs in resorts that are in season during their time off.

Working in resorts can be a very nice entrée to meeting RMs. Many of them are with dates or spouses; but there are a large number of single or divorced RMs who travel together to the resort and are quite open to meeting someone.

Sales—Store Sales or Outside Sales

STORE SALES: Sales jobs in stores reap only as well as the location and clientele. Upscale stores that expect you to look good may provide after-hours benefits with the Rich customers

of the store.

For example:

A woman selling Rolls Royce's at a dealership should meet Rich men

Esteemed men's stores would give good jobs for women

Esteemed women's stores for men

Expensive jewelry stores

Antique Stores with a Rich client base

OUTSIDE SALES: You control your own time in this career. Outside sales means you are in your office or home office only long enough to schedule appointments for whatever you

sell with clients and at the client's convenience. You spend the rest of the day traveling to meet with clients at their location. They do not come to you.

Outside sales can bring you into contact with Rich clients if the product or service you are selling fits their needs.

For example:

Outside sales for luxury hotels –
for conventions and such

Advertising plans for a company
Television/radio station air time

Scientists

If you are a scientist, become part of the fund-raising promotion of your

work. You need money to fulfill your goals as a scientist and if your work has promise to fulfill a need in society, you will likely find RMs who will help finance your research.

Scientists are esteemed in general and being married to a scientist can be a feather in an RM's cap. If this is you, be sure that you structure time with your RM away from your laboratory. Too much time apart can destroy otherwise good marriages.

There are Rich scientists, of course; and being in the same field can add a bond and understanding to romance. The marriage of scientists, Marie and Pierre Curie, is a testament to that.

Secretaries

Working for Rich Men remains one of the best inside tracks for a woman to learn how to relate to other Rich Men. And you are also meeting his wealthy friends and business associates.

My husband's secretary met and married an oil man who came to see my husband on business. The oil man is now quite wealthy and successful.

A popular novelist was secretary to an oil man and met her wealthy husband when he came for an appointment with her boss. She now enjoys writing and spending time in equestrian pursuits with her stable of

expensive horses.

A British secretary in London met and married a West Texas oil man who had a business meeting with her boss in London.

And, it is no secret that throughout contemporary history, Rich Men, when they have strayed, have strayed mostly with women they met working for their own companies or for companies of people they did business with.

Henry Ford, inventor of the Ford automobile, had an ongoing affair with a woman who worked at his Ford company.

This is fairly commonplace. Even if you do not date the Rich Men you work for, you learn how they think, what

is important to them, the types of people they respond to and those they do not.

You also—and this is important—get a glimpse of how their wives or paramours dress and behave and where they shop as well as places they frequent in their spare time. These are places you can go to enhance your comfort level.

Perks of working directly for an RM is that you learn how RMs in their genre look in style and grooming.

You learn their haunts—where they go, when they go there, and the style in which they go there. This gives you an inside edge to meeting other RMs on your own time when you know your boss will not be there.

Private Social Secretaries can be

a good way to work from the inside to hook your Super Rich Mate. It is good, of course, if you can be the Private Social Secretary to the RM of your interest; but if you have no qualms about pursuing another woman's husband, you can work for his wife.

A former US President, Franklin Delano Roosevelt, fell in love with his wife's social secretary, Lucy Mercer. At that time, his political ambitions would have been ruined if he divorced his wife. However, he loved Lucy all his life and on the day he died at age 63, she, at age 54, was with him. She was the love of his life.

Security

Private security guards who do not wear a uniform; but who are plain clothes body guards who accompany the Rich can sometimes make the crossover into a personal relationship. Two wealthy females have married their security guards.

Singers

I know a wealthy man who met his second wife when she sang at the funeral of his first wife. The church asked her to sing and the grieving husband, whose wife had been ill a rather long time, noticed her. He later asked her out, they began to see each

other and soon were married.

Whether you sing solos at your local church or are hired to sing at weddings or funerals, if you make your voice talent shown through the Richest churches, et cetera, you can be seen.

As with all performing arts, opera singers are exposed to some of the Richest people in the world. I have met a number of them who married wealthy patrons.

Nightclub singers can do rather well, too, if the clubs where they perform are frequented by RMs.

Sports

Sports—especially snow skiing

and horsemanship are excellent ways to meet the Rich. Super Rich Ski Lodges have a range of jobs, from ski instructor to bartender to waiter/waitress that can get you noticed.

If you compete successfully in horseback riding events (equestrian), you eventually meet RMs who are horse enthusiasts. And working at an esteemed race track can net a few RMs. Or you may want to work at specific race events in your country. For example, in the USA, the Kentucky Derby, et cetera.

Working as an on-staff Tennis Professional or Gold Professional or Sailing Instructor for Private Clubs gives you wonderful access to the Rich and many Rich members do become

involved in personal relationships with the pros.

Being a Professional Athlete for exclusive country clubs is a very nice entrée to meeting the Rich.

Male athletes can do well as a tennis pro, golf pro, or sailing pro at an exclusive club. You meet women constantly.

Women athletes can benefit here, too. I knew an RM who met a tennis pro at his club and wanted to marry her.

Women can work the hospitality tents for country club golf tournaments, as well as part time jobs in club houses. One wealthy and famous golfer married a woman who was selling drinks at a concession booth for a golf tournament.

Sports—especially snow skiing and horsemanship—are money sports. Super Rich Ski Lodges have jobs that get you noticed. If you compete successfully in horseback riding events (equestrian), you eventually meet the Rich, too.

Jobs at exclusive Private Clubs—even just working at the counter in the Golf Shop or Tennis Shop or Sailing Shop—put you in contact with the members and they get to know you.

You may want to submit a job application through the PGA Championship, or at Triple Crown racing events that begin include the Kentucky Derby, Preakness, and the Belmont events.

Tailoring/Seamstress

One of my Consultation Clients was a Newspaper Heir who told me he was so attracted to a beautiful Mexican-American woman who tailored his clothes. He said that his attraction to her was so strong, he often broke into a sweat and slightly trembled. Tailoring is a respected profession and if an attraction is strong, a serious relationship can occur.

If you let CEOs of companies know that you will come to their offices for fittings and create custom wear for them, you can cultivate a close relationship with them. The same is true for custom leather goods, such as custom

shoes.

Temp – (Temporary Worker)

I did this when I moved to a major city and had not yet located a job.

Working as a temp meant I often did clerical work of filing or secretarial work of typing or receptionist work of answering telephone calls.

The work itself was not glamorous, but I met interesting Rich men who visited the offices where I was temporarily working; and Rich men who worked at some of the offices. I often joked that temp work was like a ‘dating

service.’

Translator

Private Translator (must be free to travel). If you speak more than one language fluently, find out which Super Rich individuals do business or collect art from a country whose language you know. You can even combine # 1 (art/antiques) with this. For example, if you know Chinese art and you speak Chinese fluently, you can be very valuable to the Super Rich who collect Chinese art.

If you speak more than one language fluently, do seriously consider a job as a Personal Translator. A Super

Wealthy European married a Personal Translator he hired.

You may want to locate high officials in your country who need translators; or apply for a job as translator at the United Nations.

Travel

If you are a travel agent, try to coordinate luxury trips for Rich clients, whether for their companies or for their families or for a group of their friends.

Tutor

I know of a woman who tutored piano to the wife of a billionaire. He

wanted his wife to learn the better music he loved so much. When he happened to come home and overheard a lesson, he sat in on the lesson and realized the tutor had the same passion for fine music that he had.

He began secretly seeing her and ended up divorcing his wife to marry her. She was a rather mousey little woman but through her career as a private tutor, she ended up marrying the billionaire husband and she became the billionaire when he died and left it to her!

For both men and women, music tutoring of their children, governess or nanny-type work are marginal to sub-marginal. They sometimes workout, but

just as often, they do not.

School teaching rates low for meeting the Rich, but in a very small or rural community, it can be a plus, socially, with the Rich. In very small or rural communities education equates status as much as money does.

If teaching is your hot button, though, at least get into a private school with blue-blood students. Sometimes the pay is lower; sometimes it is higher. But your motives for teaching there are temporarily more important than pay.

Check the children's registration cards to see which children are from divorced parents.

Request a private conference with the parent of the opposite sex and state a

reason, related psychologically to the child, why it was important to see that particular parent. Make it a mostly positive report to the parent.

Another way to meet RMs if you are a woman teaching school is to take evening part-time jobs as a hostess in an exclusive restaurant especially if you are in or near a city. I did this myself and it was a smart move for meeting Rich men.

Waiter/Waitress— Server

Be sure you work in a business district and in a restaurant where RMs lunch; or in a Rich neighborhood, in

private club restaurants or other places RMs frequent.

A United States Supreme Court Justice met a bar waitress and married her. He also sent her through law school. Working at a prestigious ‘bar’ in Washington DC was the key to her meeting him.

A Maitre d’ (short for Maitre d’hotel) (head waiter) at one of the finest restaurants in a major city married a Rich woman he met there; and she financed a restaurant for him to own and manage.

Miscellaneous Job Tips For Men

If you happen to be in a line of work similar to the father or ex-husband of a Rich woman who interests you, you may be able to cultivate a relationship with her more easily because she can relate to it.

She probably has unresolved feelings for either of those two men and she can transfer them onto you, trying to work out that previous relationship satisfactorily. You will, of course, let her do that...MOST of the time.

Miscellaneous Job Tips For Women

Women in careers that are typically held by men can fascinate a Rich man. I have known a number of women who were Amtrak train engineers and every Rich man I mentioned it to was fascinated and interested in meeting her.

The Bottom Line For Jobs To Find An RM

The bottom line for both men and women is that whatever career you have or pursue; just upgrade the location and clientele so that you are dealing primarily with wealthy clients.

Remember that “location is

everything” for cultivating a better clientele and for meeting RMs in the job market.

Jobs that require uniforms make it harder to penetrate RMs for relationships, but not impossible. If you can, try to get a similar job without having to wear a uniform.

*Meet The Rich For
Free!*

*“Once in a relationship, do
not do anything for an RM
that the RM can hire someone
else to do.”*

—Ginie Sayles

The preceding chapter tells you how to meet your RM and get paid for it. Now, how about ways to meet the Rich for FREE? Consider the following cost-effective ways to put RMs in your life.

Political Parties

If you only have time for one volunteer effort, volunteer for political parties. Get on committees, especially steering committees. You can meet the Powers behind the Thrones there.

I cannot tell you the numbers of people who have married a hot politico

they met during a campaign.

Sex is more powerful than politics, for sure. Numerous sugar-daddy relationships with mistresses, paid courtesans, and general ‘fooling around’ between politicians and women they meet or hear about through their political connections...well, they are legion!

It crosses all political parties whether it is the ‘tolerant, open-minded’ Democrats or the ‘family values’ Republicans, sex is the great equalizer that erupts in scandal but never has lasting impact.

A wealthy Republican Senator who had a Private Consultation with me, also confided that the minute he entered politics, his former mistress from years

past, threatened blackmail. And he complied. He said that his blackmail payments were not just to protect himself, politically; but also because he did not want his wife and children to know.

Democratic President Bill Clinton was reviled for his problems keeping his zipper zipped; and he was even impeached on the recommendations of Family Values Republicans; but he never left office. And he never divorced his wife to marry a lover. That could change, but not so far.

And the same was true for President Franklin Delano Roosevelt who fell in love with his wife's secretary and wanted to marry her but he

did not. However, she went on to marry well and she and Franklin stayed in touch over the years. She was with him when he died.

However, numerous love affairs have resulted in politicians divorcing their wives to marry a lover—it has almost become commonplace.

Some of those who have divorced to marry lovers include, allegedly, New York Mayor, Rudy Giuliani who was originally a Democrat but is said to have switched to the Republican Party when it was expedient for being elected.

Too, it was reported that Republican and former Speaker Of The House, Newt Gingrich, while married, began an affair with a House of

Representatives staffer, then he divorced his wife and married the former staffer.

And then there was Mark Sanford, Governor of South Carolina who ‘went missing’ and was really with his Argentinian mistress in Argentina. His wife divorced him and he has since claimed to be engaged to the lady from Argentina.

Sanford’s career has not been hurt. He currently serves as U.S. Representative for South Carolina’s First Congressional District. Fellow Family Values Republicans, Rand Paul, Ron Paul, John Boehner, and Lindsey Graham endorsed Mark Stanford.

Perhaps his best endorsement came from *Hustler* magazine magnate,

Larry Flynt who was quoted as saying, “His (Mark Sanford’s) open embrace of his mistress in the name of love, breaking his sacred marriage vows, was an act of bravery.”

I leave it to you to decide for yourself about it; but, whatever your view, if you want to meet vulnerable RMs, hit the political trails.

Temples Of The Rich

Sex is the irresistible taboo in most religions. too. One courtesan said she made a lot of money at Southern Baptist conventions but quickly added that it was equally true for other

religious conventions, as well.

Church was the strategy of one infamous home-wrecker who was fascinated by a world-famous and married tycoon. She researched him and learned where he and his wife and children went to church.

Looking her best, the young woman went to his church and afterward, joined the parishioners in the 'after sermon' coffee room. There, she made sure the tycoon saw her and eventually, she worked her way into a conversation with him, while pretending not to know who he was.

He took the bait, they began secretly seeing each other until she confronted his wife with their affair and

he chose her over his wife.

And preachers are not safe, either. Two separate televangelists—Jim Bakker and Jimmy Swaggart, both of whom made fortunes—literally fortunes—from donations of widows, poor believers, and well-heeled believers—were both brought down by not explaining the ten commandments to their zippers.

Both preachers had sex outside their marriages (Swaggart visited prostitutes in New Orleans). In spite of it all, both men still have television ministries.

But it is not all clandestine or scandalous. Churches can be a place to meet an RM. I had a client who told me

he met his wealthy wife in an Episcopal church, after he attended by Marry Rich Seminar.

In my seminar, I explain there are wealthy RMs in every religion; however, in the western world, the denominations and religions favored by the social Rich are the Episcopal denomination and the Jewish religion. You can be open to both!

Most Christian churches do not require you to ‘buy’ your seat in church. They welcome newcomers. However, some non-Christian faiths require you to pay for your seat in the congregation—which separates people into financial classes.

Most religions have wealthy

supporters; however, NEVER get involved in a denomination or religion that:

—Tells you to vote according to Biblical/religious principles (and then interprets the principles of that religion for you! That is the same thing as telling you how to vote.)

—Teaches violence against women and children as acceptable ‘discipline.’

—Teaches violence against anyone who does not believe the way they believe.

—Requires a dress code for men or women.

—Has a “we are right and everyone else is wrong” belief system of

superiority that encourages war/violence against those who do not believe the way they believe.
—Teaches that women should be submissive to men.

For centuries, while men were at war—sometimes for years at a time—women had to make decisions for themselves, do the farming, feed the children, make fabric and clothing, care for the elderly who could not fight. But when the men came back home, the women were suddenly supposed to be ‘submissive?’

A True Story

One of the cheerleaders in my

high school was from a very wealthy family. She was a pretty girl and liked by all because she was genuinely nice to people.

After high school, she married and with her husband joined a fundamentalist Christian group that required she wear no makeup (to prevent vanity), to wear ugly, dark-colored shapeless long dresses that covered her body (to provide modesty so as not to attract men other—i.e. de-sex her), never to cut her hair (the crowning glory), and to obey her husband, who, in turn, would obey the **church preacher (who is just a guy making claims of his authority as being from on-high!)**.

They lived in a settlement of

believers in the Texas Hill Country—to separate themselves from the rest of the world who was ‘wrong’ for not believing the ‘right’ way, meaning the same way ‘they’ did!

Years later, I saw her and she was divorced, looking pretty with newly blond hair cut just above her collar, wearing stylish, colorful clothes, and going to college!

She said, “Ginie, I grew up Rich and I felt needy for something deeper and meaningful in my life so I was vulnerable to ‘religious laws’ that take away your freedom for the sake of the religious ‘laws,’ claiming it is for God

“But, Ginie, it becomes mind-control when it tells you how to interpret

the Bible think and denies you the right to make your own decisions for your clothes, your hair, your body, and your relationships with others. Such religions are just as dangerous as life without something meaningful to believe in.

“And I was naïve,” she said, “The preacher knew I was Rich and he wanted me to sign over my inheritance to his ‘work of the Lord’ and to give up the vanity of jewelry I had inherited from my grandmother as a sacrifice to God. He said that he was the voice of God and had received Divine Wisdom that it would be best for me.”

As if she had awakened from a bad dream, she then smiled and said “I told the preacher I would pray about it;

and I did. I know that God will answer each of us directly when ask him to.

“The way God answered me was by bringing my father’s words to my mind. Daddy had long ago warned my sister and me that the world is full of people who want what you have and they will tell you why you should give it to them.

“Daddy’s words rang in my ears like a warning bell. So, I left the next week. My husband stayed with them; but I received full custody of our children in the divorce. They are in grade school while I attend classes.

“I love God completely,” she said, “And the best thing I learned from my experience is that God loves me

more than a human preacher does. God protected me from the preacher's all-too-human greed.

She continued, "Just because a person is ordained, does not change the fact that he is still human underneath it all. God liberated me from the preacher's vanity of thinking he is God's spokesman. Now, I don't live under the thumb of anyone else. I am truly free and happy and that feels like the greatest spiritual fulfillment I can hope for."

Health Charities Of The Rich

For men, volunteer for charities

the Rich support, for hospitals the Rich use, for churches the Rich frequent. It is just possible you could be mobbed by lonely wealthy ladies who yearn for an understanding heart.

Realize these charities do not exist for your social life, so do excellent volunteer work. People are attracted to someone they respect and leaders in these organizations respect anyone who does a great job as a volunteer. That is because all people are expected to do a good job for pay; but the person who does excellent work as a volunteer without pay for a charity is considered a person of quality. So be reliable. Better still, be indispensable.

Art Societies

Volunteer for non-profit arts...this can be a nice resource of wealthy women for men. Women can network with other women they meet there to introduce them to men to date. It gives you entree to social events where you will meet RMs.

Elsewhere in this book, I detail the true story of a male artist who met a wealthy woman who was on the board of one such art entity.

Performing Arts

Volunteer to hand out programs or

work concessions for Performing Arts—such as Community Theaters, Opera, Ballet, Symphony, Theater—and this enables you to attend these very expensive events and to come face-to-face with Rich patrons.

Another way to volunteer is as a Supernumerary for Operas or as an Extra for theater groups. You get to appear onstage with the celebrity performers or main cast but you do not have a speaking part. Supernumeraries are frequently used in ‘crowd scenes’ on the stage.

I have seen a number of wealthy people do this, themselves; from a surgeon to a businessman, an architect, a housewife, and so on. Typically, these are people who love opera or theater

and want to participate in a minor but important way.

Interestingly, one of my clients followed this advice and volunteered for a local theater in her city. She was asked to stand backstage with the script and whisper lines to any of the performers who might forget what they were supposed to say next.

During her second year there, the director asked her to audition for a lead role in a play. He chose her and the reviews she received were so good that agents descended on her and she was offered the lead in another play in a major city.

*Meet The Rich
Socially*

*“Marrying the Rich is like
marrying Santa Claus and
raiding his toy bag all year
round.”*

—Ginie Sayles

This is my least favorite way to suggest your meeting an RM because you have to PAY your very own precious money to get into the socials and you may go there and still not meet anybody! Too, the real socializing among the Rich will take place privately after the event. However, do try some of the following where the Rich will be:

Performing Arts Opening Nights

Buy the most exclusive opening night tickets that include a social

afterward to the major performing arts events.

OPENING NIGHTS ONLY!!

This allows anyone who buys an expensive ticket to meet certain cast members and feel en rapport with the financial lords of the land.

The Rich know they are being used as bait to tantalize the Would-Be Rich. In fact, these charity organizations sell many such tickets and refer to it as Snob Appeal selling.

Snob Appeal means that people go places simply because the Rich go there. They want to be able to say they did such and such that the Rich did. And,

there is nothing wrong with that.

If you are a volunteer (previous chapter) for the Performing Arts group, you are automatically invited to cast parties, which are typically held in the fine home of a Rich patron and attended by their Rich friends as well as the cast. This means you are socializing with the Rich at minimal cost to you.

This can be true of major performing arts groups or small community theater groups that depend on the support of their Rich patrons more than ticket sales.

Attend Auctions

You do not have to buy anything,

but get on the email lists of upscale auction houses and go to their auctions. You learn a lot just by being there and you can start conversations with people about an item that will be auctioned.

When you see the same people at a few auctions, you naturally strike up a friendly rapport and eventually that turns into more. Sometimes, it happens the first time you meet.

Museum Memberships

You will pay more for this; but a membership that includes private lectures and cocktail parties can bring you into contact with some RM

supporters. Some cities are better than others; and some museums are better than others, too. Museums of natural science are very good, but do not overlook Art museums, too.

Art Galleries

Again, get your name on the email list of art galleries so that you are invited to private showings that often have Rich art buyers in attendance.

Hobbies

Rich hobbyists are dedicated to

learning and furthering their hobby. It can be anything from gardening to sport car enthusiasts or classic car enthusiasts. Look them up on the Internet and attend local events for them.

Parties

All these interests should lead to parties – and parties are a fun, relaxed way to mix and mingle and to meet RMs. It is nice to have an invitation; but if not, the next chapter will tell you how to get into the parties and meet RMs, anyway!

Crash Parties

“Cinderella did not wait for her Prince to find her. She had the moxie to Crash the hottest party in town and got the Prince!”

— Ginie Sayles

Cinderella successfully crashed the ball because she dressed as if she 'belonged' there



Copyright © 1996, 2011 Glisde Sayles
ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

After Cinderella changed her image, she mustered up the moxie to crash the hottest party in town—which meant she was going for her dream!

You must not fear being outrageous in your ploys because they frequently are the very ones that work the best.

A Fun Way I Met An RM

People ask me if I did things I mention in this book. Indeed, I did! Many times. The one that follows contains so many elements and so many different methods rolled into one, that I have selected it to share.

One year, I had business to conclude out of town on December 31st, one year, which is an unfortunate

situation for New Year's Eve!

However, I noticed a man in a gold Mercedes as he stopped to pick up his date. He was cute and I decided I would like to meet him. My teen-age, daughter, who was with me, took down his license plate number as I followed the car to see where they were going, so we could go there.

They went to an office building where a private party was obviously in progress from the lights that were blazing only on the top floor and people dressed up going into the building. By the time we found a parking place and got to the front door of the building, the couple we followed had already disappeared inside and the door was

locked.

We turned to leave when an older couple emerged from the elevator into the lobby and walked toward the door. As they opened the door, we entered, saying, "Happy New Year!" and got on the elevator. We rode to the top floor to crash the party.

We walked past the girl taking up invitations, saying "Happy New Year!" as we passed and disappeared into the throng.

We had a lot of fun, met the host (oops!—but it turned out okay), met the host's secretary, who had been the one taking up invitations, and I even kissed a few people Happy New Year.

However, we never found the

couple in the gold Mercedes we had followed to the party.

Re-strategize, If Necessary

The next day, we returned to Dallas, but it bothered me that I had not met the man and I wanted to meet.

A few days later, I traced the car tag but it only gave the name of the car dealership who sold him the car and they would not tell me his name.

So a few weeks after the party, I telephoned the host's secretary, described the man, and asked who he was.

"Hmmm. Well, I do not know if he

has a gold Mercedes," she said, "but that sounds just like Charlie so and so."

I called information, got his home telephone number and dialed his home to see if a woman might answer.

Instead, his answering machine came on, saying, "Hello, Charlie isn't here right now; but if you will leave your name and number, he'll gladly call you back."

After I hung up the telephone, an idea came to me...I could leave a message, pretending a had—a wrong number!

Leave Enticing Messages On A Voice Mail

I sat bolt upright. Yes, that is it—I will leave an enticing message on his answering machine as a wrong number!

At home, I began scribbling out a script. I knew there are four things that are imperative for a woman to make known in order to get the interest of a man. Those four things are:

First: Men are extremely, extremely **romantic**. I knew I had to let him know that I am romantic.

Second: Men want to think they have a **desirable** woman. He could not see me, so he would not know if I were desirable or not; so, I knew that if he thought other men like me, that he would figure I look okay.

Third: And I had to let him know that I was **available**.

Fourth: Some men are conscious of an **appropriate age**, so I had to contrive a reason to let him know I was in his age range.

My script contained all those ingredients. Plus, since his answering machine gave a name—Charlie—I could not very well leave a wrong number unless the name happened to be the same, which was not very likely!

Finally, I came up with the name "Chuck" since Chuck is a nickname for Charles just as Charlie is.

Waiting until 2:00 pm on a week

day, when I knew he would be at his office, I telephoned his house. Surely enough, his answering machine gave the same greeting, "Hello, Charlie isn't here right now, but if you will leave your name and number, he'll gladly call you back."

"What a funny message!" I said in a sparkly voice, "Hi, Chuck. This is Ginie. I just wanted to thank you for flying up to Dallas for my surprise birthday party. I like being 39 (This was February. My birthday is mid-June).

But, I am sorry about the conversation we had at the airport. Please don't be angry....Call me....Bye."

Click. (I hung up the telephone). *I had given my first name, my*

city, and my age.

Of course, he could not call me. He had no telephone number.

Then I waited two weeks and wrote out another script. At 2:00 pm on a week day, I called again.

Once again, his answering machine came on, "Hello, Charlie isn't here right now, but if you will leave your name and number, he'll gladly call you back."

I said, "Hi Chuck. this is Ginie again. Gosh, I guess you really are mad about our conversation at the airport. You said that I don't want a real relationship, that I like single life. But that is not true. It's just that I am so

romantic. I think there should be more between two people than just friendship. You and I have been friends for so long, let's not spoil it now. Please don't be mad. Please call me...bye."

Click. (I hung up the telephone). *I had led him to believe another man found me desirable; but that I considered the man just a friend, so I was available and that I am romantic.*

And, of course, he could not call me because he did not know who I was and therefore had no telephone number

for me.

I waited another two weeks. I really did not know what I was going to do next. I could not just keep leaving messages that led nowhere. I needed a reason to call and to leave my telephone number. The best ploy seemed to be that I could say I had moved and had a new number and leave it.

I didn't know what else to do. I had come this far; so I picked up the telephone and dialed his number—but I was in for a surprise!

His answering machine came on: "Hello, Charlie isn't here right now, but if you will leave your name and number, he'll gladly call you back....if this is

Ginie, Charlie said he's not mad about the conversation at the airport, but he's lost your telephone number! If you can leave your number, he'll gladly call you back."

I was absolutely SHOCKED!

Shaking, I looked at the receiver and hung up. Oddly enough, the first thought that came into my head was "Nobody will ever believe me!"

So, I went to the nearest electronic store and asked if they had a something that would allow me to bug my own telephone with a recorder.

They did and I went back home and I have it on tape! (My husband has even heard it)

The actual recording of Charlie's voice

*in his message is now on
YouTube.*

In the meantime, though, Charlie's machine was getting click, click, click from me before I finally left a message.

When I called back, I said, "Uhm, I think I must have a wrong number...but, my name is Ginie Polo (which was my divorced surname at the time) and I am a stockbroker and my telephone number at work is (and I gave the number)."

Well, he called me at work the very next day, said he would be in Dallas on Thursday and asked if I would meet him for a drink.

I agreed and, surely enough, at the appointed time, he arrived and introduced himself to me.

He was the wrong man!!!

He was not the man I had followed in the gold Mercedes, although he certainly fit his description of height and hair color.

I was more than surprised—I was astonished! All that work!

But he was a wonderful man! And he turned out to be an RM, too! His family is one of the most distinguished names in Texas ranching. We dated through the spring and summer of that year and I even spent Labor Day weekend at his ranch in South Texas that September.

If he ever finds out that I met him by design, I think he will love it and laugh, too—that is the kind of neat person he is. He did ask me when we

first met if his friends were setting him up.

...Not by one of his friends, no.

Note: I have posted the event on YouTube.com and on my website.

How To Crash A Party

If you crash a party there are three rules to follow.

—Be sure it is a large party, not a small gathering.

—Crash QUIETLY.

—Stay safe.

Once you have quietly crashed a few parties, other people who see you there will not know you crashed and they will think you BELONG there. Then

they automatically put you on their invitation list to their parties and soon you are not crashing anymore. A friend of mine had major success with this system.

The preferred way to crash a party is to know who is giving the party, although I crashed a party successfully without knowing who was giving it and it turned out very, very well.

If you know who is giving the party and the occasion, then, dress appropriately, fill your pocket or purse with elegant personal cards, which are the size of a business card and contain only your name, your social media sites, email, and your mobile phone number (not work number, not address) – and

only put those items you do not mind someone having.

Getting Into The Party

Wait until the event is well underway, then enter. Do not look at the person who is taking up invitations. Walk past, casually.

If you are stopped, you can say you have already checked in and turn before being asked your name and go into the crowd.

Or, you can say you are looking for someone and you will return in a minute. If you are asked to supply the name, give the name of the host. If you

are asked to wait while the invitation-taker fetches the host, you can use that time to leave.

Or, if the party is very large, once the invitation-taker disappears into the crowd (unless there is someone assisting him/her), you can disappear into the crowd, also, in a different direction, hoping not to encounter the person.

If you do encounter the invitation-taker, act as if you are trying to find him or her to tell them you have already given your message to the host (or to someone else to give to the host and thank the invitation-taker for his/her trouble).

Turn as if you are leaving, move rapidly ahead and away and move in the

direction that indicates you are leaving the event. When you are far enough ahead, duck a different direction.

However, if you watch, carefully, at the time you arrive to crash, you can usually find a time that the person taking up invitations is either engrossed in something or you can find another means of entering.

Walk with people of your gender who are returning from the restroom or some area near you and simply walk as if you are with them into the party.

As you pass the invitation-taker, you can ask one of the people you are walking with a quiet question, such as the time, and that looks even more official that your invitation has already

been processed because you are with other guests.

This method is more on your side than any other because the invitation-taker cannot possibly remember every person in a very large party and if you are walking in with people as if you are part of their group, the invitation-taker will assume your invitation has already been processed.

Once In The Party

Before you go to the party, anticipate party talk. After all, the whole point of crashing a party is to meet people—which means talking to them.

Be very smooth and casual about introducing yourself to people. Be observant of situations during the party that allow you to make comments to someone as a way of starting a brief conversation that shows your charm and allows you to introduce yourself.

For example, you can comment about something being served, “The shrimp is to die for,” and when the other person responds, you smile and say, “My name is _____, what is your name.” Or you can just give your name and see if the person offers their name, too.

ONLY introduce yourself to someone of the opposite sex.

Anticipate that those who do not

know you will likely be curious as to how you know the host.

Prepare an answer that logically fits.

If, say, you have read about Mr. Super Duper in the society pages and know that he is active in supporting the opera, do not say that you met him through the opera. **Remember, you are not here to meet Mr. Super Duper. You are here to meet people of Mr. Duper's caliber who may be datable.**

Very likely the person you are talking to is also active in the opera and knows anyone Mr. Duper knows. Questions about it could cause problems.

Instead, you may say that you and

Super (use his first name) met through a mutual friend.

If asked the name of the friend and I doubt you will be, make up a name and add, from Australia, "Do you know him?" Naturally, the answer will be no, but you can just smile and say, "A fine person," and then ask a question that the person cannot answer with a simple yes or no. Instead of asking "Isn't this a beautiful day?" which only invites a yes or no, ask "When was the last time you experienced a day as beautiful as this?"

Respond charmingly to small talk, and move on to other people. Lingering too long not only kills a person's interest in you, but it can also lead to conversation that would give you away

as a party crasher.

Only if a particular rapport builds between you and someone there will you offer to give your personal card, saying, "I have enjoyed talking to you. Before I go, I would like to give you my personal card."

When they take it, smile, and move on to other people.

It is best if you know what your host looks like so you can avoid him. Also, do not overstay because, again, that increases your chances of getting caught.

Crashable Parties

Parties that are among the easiest

to crash are those that are given in large hotel ballrooms and large outdoor garden parties on accessible grounds of a mansion. Also, if you have tickets to a special event (perhaps an arts event) that has a party following it and your ticket does not include an invitation to the party, crash.

One way to find parties to crash is by cruising such areas during party seasons, such as Christmas, Halloween (costumes make your chances of crashing even better), New Year's Eve, the 4th of July.

These are high alcohol consumption events, and people who are drinking are less likely to notice irregularities, which makes it easier for

you in every way.

Also, social media sites frequently pre-announce galas and balls. Being in the right neighborhood allows you to hear about a specific party that someone is giving.

Tailgate

Be a subtle private eye. Do not snoop, but follow impressive looking couples and see where they go. Go there yourself.

Track down a license plate number if you are able and figure out a way to meet the person.

25

*Widowed Or
Divorced RMs*

**—Obituaries &
Public Records—**

*“In New York City, people find
available apartments by*

*reading obituaries. Looking
for Marriage in the
Obituaries is a motive that
can benefit both of you.”*
—Ginie Sayles

All relationships end—either by divorce or death, all relationships eventually end. Sad, but true. Either way, you need to know that life is forcing at least one person to change. You can be a healthy part of that change, as you will read in this and future chapters.

Death

FACT: A man typically seeks a new mate within three (3) months after his wife dies. I am not saying this is right or wrong—I am simply reporting the TRUTH— and if you do not accept this fact about men, another woman will. Don't argue with the right and wrong of life; cooperate with reality.

Some women will not consider dating until about two years after the death of her husband; although a few will venture out a little sooner, but they are rare. However, if a man steps into

her life quickly ‘in a helpful situation,’ she may quickly warm to him and ease into a relationship.

A wealthy widow may marry sooner if she is helped by an investment advisor she grows to depend on (I knew a situation like this).

Another situation that can spur remarriage is group grief counseling. I had two wealthy widow clients who said they met men in group grief counseling who first became friends with them, then became dates, then lovers, and then wanted to marry. One of the women did marry but it was a year after her husband died, the other did not.

Another wealthy widow told me she took a cruise on the QE 2 (no longer

in service, unfortunately) and that she was surrounded by wealthy men who were interested in marrying her. The QE 2 was a ship some people actually lived on and basically, you had to be Rich to take a cruise on it.

Why Men Are Often Different

Men who have been married a long time are lost without a marital anchor in their lives.

In a strange way, it is a compliment to their deceased wives. If an RM had not had a happy marriage, he would not want to marry again. Even if

a man thinks he would never be able to live without his wife; once she is gone, he discovers the sad vacuum she leaves behind in his life is too great. His pain can be so intense, he actively seeks a replacement and quickly, to help alleviate the pain. If he was married quite awhile, he realizes he does not want to live alone.

Within my family and among my friends, I can tell you true situations:

Situation 1: A super-wealthy man who had been married over forty years and was devoted to his wife, was devastated when she died of cancer. Two months later, he went into a store he frequented and asked the sixty year old

widow who worked there to dinner. Two (2) months, just 2 months after his wife died!

A month after that, they began taking trips to Europe. He paid off her bills, gave her charge accounts, bought her the latest luxury car of her choice, and asked her to marry him. When she said yes, he had her to stop working and they married the next year – and are still and happily married after 14 years

The key to their getting married is that he did not allow his grown children to dissuade him from replacing their mother so quickly. He knew it was his life and his needs and his loneliness that would govern his life, not his children—and he was right to feel that way.

In his autobiography, he devoted most of his book to writing about life with his first wife; but he states, unapologetically, that after she died, he knew within a few weeks that he did not want to live alone.

Situation 2: A famous mover and shaker who had also been married about forty years lost his wife and was married again within the same year. He, too, mentioned that living alone was not for him.

Situation 3: One of my clients was mistress to a married Chicago businessman for twenty-five years. He and his wife had no children, so he

could have easily divorced her if he had wanted to; but he made it clear to my client that he would never divorce her. When his wife died after almost fifty years of marriage, he married my client quickly. He had a ‘replacement’ waiting in the wings when his wife died. However, he died in less than two years, leaving my client millions of dollars.

Situation 4: Another man’s wife died after thirty-five years of marriage. The week after her funeral, he called a woman he had met several years before in a fitness gym. She lived in another city, so he went to see her, they married three weeks later (much to the horror of his children) and they went on with their

lives. He told me “I could not face living life alone.”

Occasionally, a widower (male) may ask a new woman to wait 2 years to marry, out of respect for his children or other family members. If you are a woman in this situation, **suggest marrying**, and then having a quiet wedding for friends and family 2 years later. Emphasize that they will never know you are already married. This is fair to you. If you wait longer, he might adjust to his new single status or he might meet someone else he wants to marry.

A woman I knew met a Rich widower shortly after his wife died and he proposed by the third date and

wanted to marry within a couple of months. His adult children raised such a fuss that he was being disrespectful of their late mother that he listened to them (never listen to your children about your love life) and he and the woman agreed to be engaged for two years.

During that time, he became accustomed to living alone, and could always call his 'fiancée' when he felt lonely or have her spend the night or he would spend the night at her place.

But they were not married and he knew it. While on a business trip during their 2-year wait (to please his children), he met a woman and began seeing her during his trips. Soon he met another woman and then another. He

broke his engagement and began to live the life of a footloose bachelor. The “2-years-out-of-respect” idea wasted 2 years of his former fiancée’s life.

If she had suggested they secretly marry, he probably would have done it during his early stage of wanting to marry her.

If you want to be the woman an RM widower marries, then do not wait around out of respect for his late wife; because he probably will not be available by the time you think it is right.

Remember this: Rich widowers do not want to be alone! Two months is about the most they can tolerate of the loneliness and suffering. They actively seek relief in the comfort of a new

relationship and the emotional security of marriage.

So...where do you find the female and male RMs who have lost their spouses and who will find someone else, if you don't find them first? Well...frankly...in the obituaries.

In New York, people read obituaries to find an apartment! At least you are hoping to assuage the grief of a surviving partner and benefit both of you.

Obituaries

Study online or published obituaries and follow up with a strategy to meet the person.

Locate the widower's office, if you are a woman, and apply for a job (even if you have different job qualifications). Or you can pretend to be a journalist, writing a story about his late wife (if she had some distinction, such as charity leadership).

If you are licensed to work in a financial institution, you can cold call the day you read the obituary. If you are truly good with investments you can genuinely help the grieving person. There are stockbrokers who target Rich widows and make a fortune by handling the her account.

As mentioned before, a woman friend of mine said that she appreciated a stockbroker calling her on the day her

husband's death was announced. She said she was worried more about how to handle the money he left her than anything else. She said, "My stockbroker saved my life, financially. I was relieved when he called." Oh, and she married the stockbroker!

The grieving survivor is vulnerable to help because they are confused and worried about what to do now. Someone appears out of the blue with a sense of authority and who seems to know what he/she is doing and the new widow or widower allow themselves to be guided through it.

A woman on the West Coast read in the obituaries that a wealthy man's

wife had died. She waited a few months and then telephoned. Posing as a freelance journalist, she asked to interview him for a publication in his industry.

She further requested if she might interview him one evening because of her schedule.

The gentleman consented and welcomed her into his home and into his library for an hour's interview. This woman asked him questions, guiding him to reveal important, useful information about himself, about his deceased wife, and their life together. She was smart enough also to ask about his children and other family.

As she stood to leave, he said, "You know, my family does not like for

me to talk about all this. I have had it bottled up inside and you have been good for me tonight. Would you mind if we have dinner some time soon?"

She gave him her telephone number and said she also might call him if she needed to clarify anything. This was smart. If, for some reason, he decided not to call, she would have a reason to call him back.

Well, he did call. They did go to dinner and this time, she kept the conversation away from his deceased wife or grief. She discussed his youth, how he had built his business, sports interest and so on. They married some months later.

It is kind of like going to an estate

auction after a death. The items being sold may have been dearly loved by the deceased, but they have been left behind and will go to the highest bidder.

Remember, someone will marry this Rich widow or widower, and it may as well be you. You are not trying to rip him off. You are helping the person build a new, fulfilling life – and you are also building a new, fulfilling life for yourself.

So, knowing your good intentions, study the following:

How To Read The Obits

The first thing you must understand is that you are not going to

find a wealthy prospect every time you search obituaries.

The second thing is, you may find a prospect who is too old. The surviving spouse may be virtually senile (yes, I know you may not care, but the point is that the surviving spouse may not even be able to remember your name, much less marry you).

Third, learn which organizations require considerable money to join as well as prestigious recommendations in order to join; or require the giving of large sums of money; or connections to join. There are even churches, churches, synagogues and such that have more Rich members than other churches, synagogues, etc. This information

reveals a lot about a person's financial picture.

Society Pages in Local News Websites can give you a good idea as to which clubs have moneyed club memberships.

Usually, if there is a big write-up, the deceased was important in some way to the community, to history, to society, to the country, to the world. In most cases, that translates into big money being left behind.

Not always, of course; because the person may have been noted for a particular heroic act or award but settled into a quiet, happy life that didn't require a lot of money for enjoyment.

But, by and large, if someone is

being covered for free in a story by the newspaper apart from the tiny print obituary that someone has to pay for, then the person usually had financial prestige.

Note the words I have underlined in the sample.

Sample News Column Obituary

rites set for Jack Jackson III

Services will be Monday for Jack Jackson III, a prominent Major City businessman. Mr. Jackson, 58, died of a heart attack Saturday at Major City Hospital. His funeral will be at 1 p.m.

at St. John's Episcopal Church.

In 1959, Mr. Jackson, a Major City native, received a bachelor of arts degree from Yale in 1948.

He created the Jackson Manufacturing Co. in Major City, which specialized in government aircraft contracts. He also founded the Jackson Children's Retreat on a section of the sprawling more than 15,000 acre Jackson Ranch in Montana. The privately funded retreat serves as an environmental therapy service for troubled children, ages 7 to 12 and offers a variety of domestic and exotic animals. The retreat has been a haven for hundreds of children over the 12 years since its inception.

Mr. Jackson was a member of the Redwild Club, the Major City Country Club, and St. John's Episcopal Church.

He is survived by his wife, Mamie Jackson of Major City, and by a sister, Mrs. Edwina Jackson Phelps, and his father, Jack Jackson, Jr.

Obits For Men Seeking Rich Widows

Men who are checking the obits can easily see that Mrs. Jackson is likely no older than 55 to 65—and over 60 is not too likely. And, who knows, she may have been considerably younger than Mr. Jackson. At any rate, chances are, she is

now a widow who is financially well-off.

Her late husband's name—Jack Jackson III—the "third" has a lofty sound of inheritance in it. Often, the tradition of inheriting a name into the numbers is found among those who are also inheriting money from the first one, Jack

Jackson III—and properly tie the name with the money in its chain of command from originator to inheritor.

A manufacturing company that specializes in government aircraft contracts should be rather lucrative.

Not only that, but anyone who "founds" a sizable charity facility, such as the retreat for troubled children, is usually a leader and has some

impressive connections. The fact that it is founded on his goodly-sized ranch indicates money. Exotic animals are expensive!

His education at Yale cost a lot and his connections from Yale probably yielded expensive connections, as well.

His membership in the Redwild Club is something that you have to know for yourself as to whether it is an exclusive, prestigious club in your community. If you do not know that, find out. They are often mentioned in Society Pages of local news websites.

Too, if the particular Episcopal church listed is THE prestigious Episcopal church of your community, then you know the old boy was

simpatico with other Rich who pray there.

Although money is attracted to the Episcopal denomination, not just every Episcopal church has moneyed genuflectors. You need to know.

This is true of country clubs, too. Be sure you know which clubs, country clubs, and churches or synagogues are the places where power money plays and prays.

You might have some concern that Jack's father is still alive and ties up some of the money, still, and he also has a sister who may have connections to his money; but, from the look of things, Jack was a Wealth-Building heir and made money, himself.

No children were mentioned as survivors, which means less interference in the marriage-romance you have in mind for the widow. Plus it probably means more money for the two of you.

Women can also find Rich Widowers with this type of Obituary.

Tiny Print Obits

Do not overlook the tiny print obits! There are many wealthy people in very large cities who are only noted in death through such obituaries. They are often worded in a clipped manner to save space.

Sample Tiny Print

Column Obits

These do not have headlines and the woman below is listed more than once as a tribute of notices by several people.

LINDENMOST—Grace Ellen. on Dec. 31, 1990. Wife of Simon. A memorial tribute to be announced on a later date. Contributions in her memory may be made to the opera company of your choice.

LINDENMOST—Grace Ellen. The Board of Directors, James Smith. Sinclair Masson, the singers, and administration of the Major City Opera

Company deeply mourn the passing of Grace Ellen Lindenmost, a beloved friend and long time supporter of the company. Her ongoing generosity and devotion to the arts has nurtured not only the Major City Opera Company but also innumerable other arts organizations. Her effect will long be felt throughout the art world. The Major City Opera extends its deepest condolence to her loved ones at this hour.

LINDENMOST—Grace Ellen.

The Board of Directors, faculty, staff and students of the School of American Opera grieve the loss of Grace Ellen Lindenmost, devotee and patron, and are indebted to her generous encouragement

and support.

Obits For Women Seeking Rich Widowers

A quick scan of this dear lady's obituary tells you that Simon is probably one Rich widower. In fact, it may have been dear Simon's money that so endeared Grace Ellen as a contributor to the opera company.

The fact that three paid obituary columns are dedicated to this woman is, in itself, eye-catching. But the fact that two of the obituary tributes are paid for by a major opera house, whose existence depends on contributors; and also by a school for opera whose furtherance is

also sustained by donors, lets you know that this woman was a patron of hefty sums.

The language itself, and the words I have underlined, paints a picture of a woman who was Social Rich—a desirable level of rich, to be sure.

But to top it off, the second obit lets you know she paid her way into many top social events with deep pocket donations to "innumerable other arts organizations."

Simon Lindenmost is a most desirable candidate for your interest.

One thing missing here is any mention of her age—although the obit refers to her "long time" generosity, so she is probably middle aged or past.

Now, you know that in order to meet Simon, you can likely get into volunteer memberships for the Major City Opera Company or telephone the opera company for a story on the dear lady and ask how you can reach her husband or children for a comment.

You may be more successful with an indirect approach. You could telephone the opera company and say you are conducting educational research (working on a doctorate, writing a book or a novel) on opera.

You can ask if there are back issues of their in-house magazines that you can come to the opera and research through. If so, I assure you some issues will pay tribute to Grace Ellen or to the

couple.

In fact, the first opera given by the company that is performed after her demise will likely have a write-up about her in their program.

Her widowed husband may attend the opera in her behalf if there will be some tribute made in her honor (not likely, but possible. You can inquire).

And, you can research Grace Ellen and Simon Lindenmost's name online and in the Major City Library newspaper Society Pages (I capitalize Society Pages for emphasis) for an idea of other events they supported.

Use Your Noggin

Then you must use your own noggin to find a way to get into an event or to telephone or to apply for a job or to have your car break down in his neighborhood so you can inquire at his house for assistance—at a time you believe him to be home and complain that your mobile phone is not working well, either, for you to call for help (See How To Meet A Specific Person in this Chapter).

If you know where he lives, you can quietly follow him to see where he goes at certain times and then go those places yourself, looking as gorgeous as possible and positioning yourself where he can see you. You can even take a date

as a prop.

You can also say, "Excuse me, aren't you Simon Lindenmost? I met you briefly at a Major City Opera Company ...(name an event you read he attended). Then ask him a question that is not a yes or no question so he has to answer you in a sentence or a string of sentences.

You then comment on his reply and develop it into a conversation. Be sure to mention something you always admired about his interest or his profession. Hand him your personal card, smile, and say, "Excuse me, I must go; but, I have enjoyed seeing you. I hope I will see you again." Then, leave and join your date or leave the premises, etcetera.

No, there is no guarantee that he will call, but if you do this with enough obit leads, you will likely find some takers.

In sum, when reading obits, look for names you recognize as prominent. If you do not see names you recognize as prominent, then clues as to financial standing can include:

- Private schools or impressive schooling

- Ownership of business

- Titles that indicate inheritance or social standing with tradition

- Founding of companies or charitable foundations

- Patron contributions or other philanthropy

Arts organizations, charities,
upscale churches or synagogues

Clubs and memberships that
require money or prestige to join

Age (old is okay as long as
pre-senile)

Survivors—how much will the
pie (money) be divided up?

Society Pages

Usually, social sections of online newspapers flash prominent or Rich smiles taken at party galas and rattle off names and locations of private clubs. If you see numerous smiles of your widow or widower in this section, it is a good indication of social/financial

connections – especially if the social event attended was charitable.

When you come across the picture of the RM in the society pages, research the person. Find out what the RM's interests are. Discover where the RM goes and go there.

How To Verify The Quality Of A Club Listed In The Obit

Telephone every private club listed in the telephone directory and inquire about membership requirements.

If your name is asked, you can make up one. Then, check the Society Pages in the newspaper websites to see if there are recognizable names attending events held in those clubs.

If you are new to a community, do not worry, you will soon learn the names that have clout. Then you will know which names to look for.

Online Divorce Records

Some cities do publish public records of divorces, while others do not. A famous movie star (whose name you would know) was recuperating at a spa, and she deliberately looked up the divorce records, looking for marriage

leads.

Surely enough, the movie star read about the divorce of a very wealthy man I met and dated two years after their relationship ended. When she read about his divorce, she telephoned him and they began seeing each other.

Although he did not marry her, the ploy worked well enough for her to enjoy an excellent date life with him. And since he was going through a divorce, which is not easy for anyone, he was glad she saw the news announcement of his divorce and called him.

When you look up online divorce records, look for names that you know are Rich. Otherwise, research the

divorce online. If an address is listed, the house is probably being sold as part of the divorce settlement; but the neighborhood can give you a good idea of financial wherewithal. If the person's address is not listed online in the telephone database, it may be listed in online City Directories.

26

*Online Dating Tips
To Meet The Rich*

**—Mobile Apps &
Websites—**

*“Attract the Rich with your
online Dating Profile,
Keywords, Types of Pictures to*

Post, et cetera.”

—Ginie Sayles

Online dating and mobile dating are here to stay—thank God! They can be an effective addition to finding relationships you want, including with the Rich. Yes, you have to be careful: and you may have to sort through a number of women or men you don't want, or possibly be rejected by some who interest you, and have a few relationships that don't work out.

But that is how it is in real life,

anyway! You can look really hot and go to parties, bars, churches, social mixers, private clubs and have exactly the same kind of luck of not meeting someone special or sorting through the ones you meet—and you should still do all of those activities, too—but with online dating, you can cut your losses faster. Online dating is a shortcut.

Just as you can identify types of people you meet in person, once you are active on the Internet dating scene, you soon see patterns in keywords and profiles for certain types of people you do or do not want to check out, so you avoid wasting time.

At this time, you may end up investing about \$300 a year in online

dating sites, possibly more, possibly less. But think about how much you invest a year on going out to clubs every week, possibly several times a week.

Being Proactive about your date life is the most important step you can take. Dating is a sorting process and it gives you a social life while you ‘sort.’ Remember that having a Social Life is better than “waiting” for the right person to show up in your life. That may happen; but it will happen faster if you are proactive and keep an active social life of having fun while you ‘sort.’ Online dating sites can be part of that, as long as you keep ‘safety’ as your number one priority. Let’s examine the

possibilities.

Traditional Online Dating Sites Versus Niche Dating Sites

Traditional Dating Sites

are “come one, come all” for the most part. Some have you to fill out detailed forms and they match your so-called algorithms or behavior patterns with members who have compatible algorithms.

This harkens back to the 1950s

Computer Dating Services, which did basically the same thing and actually did pretty well. Today, these types of services want to sound more current, so they combine it with profiles, and keywords for online customers. And some of them require good credit scores. *Check each one for their requirements.*

Be Honest; *but* Be Wise: One of my wealthy clients told me that she was not accepted by one of these well-known sites because she answered her questionnaire honestly that she had been depressed at times in her life. A year later, she met someone who had worked

for that site and the person told her that anyone who confessed to seems like a personality risk, possibly a form of mental illness.

As an aside, I state here and now that depression is typically an emotional condition, not a mental illness, unless the person takes prescription drugs to cure it with side effects that affect a person's mental state negatively.

Many forms of depression can be worked through without drugs if a person has a counselor who is not a supporter of prescriptions. I am told that some physicians who prescribe a medication receive trips or bonuses from those drug companies whose medications they prescribed. Scary!

I believe in natural methods FIRST along with (1) positive self-reprogramming affirmations, (2) vigorous physical exercise, (3) vitamins, (4) organic, healthful foods, (5) social activities—joining a club that interests you, i. e. cooking, gardening, painting, sculpting or making jewelry, biking, just doing something positive that you love to do.

Other Traditional Online Dating Services are not in the algorithms business but they still gather a lot of information about you and also post your photographs, your profile and keywords.

And they may add other perks, such as meeting parties, coffee/tea/wine tastings, cooking classes and any number

of other activities for members. These additional activities provide a wider social life for members and opportunities to meet other members. Many singles have had a lot of success with this type of dating site.

A word to the wise: At this time, legitimate traditional dating sites will drop members for nude pictures and profanity.

Niche Dating Sites zero in on specific values, principles, hobbies, or interests that are important to specific individuals—sort of an isolated algorithm without all the fuss.

Niche Dating Sites can be based on a religious niche, an age niche,

ethnicity niche, sexual orientation niche, single parent niche, nationality niche; and, yes, a financial niche.

A word of warning, here: A person you meet via a religious site (any religious site) does not guarantee she or he is a good person. I don't care how religious the person 'sounds' keep your strictest 'safety rules' unshakable as you get to know the person.

The most popular Niche Dating Site at this time (and it is growing) is the 50+ but age-defined dating includes the specific 40s age category and there are others.

So what should you do? Do not limit yourself. Consider going for one or more Traditional and at least two or

more Niche

The Rich Niche

Do RMs shop for relationships online? Of course, they do. And this is good for you. Where are they? You can find them through niche dating sites as well as traditional ones.

Niche dating sites are “target-specific”—reaching out to people who have strong interests in a particular activity and who want to meet someone to share that interest. And niche dating sites have become one of the strongest markets for dating sites.

So, ask yourself, what are expensive sports, activities, and hobbies

the Rich can afford and that most people cannot? These can include dating services for sailing enthusiasts, horse/equestrian lovers, opera, ballet, or classical music buffs and any competitive sport that requires money to participate. These people are looking for someone to share their passion—but you want to be sure they own the boats, horses, or are season ticket holders of box seats to the niche events.

One non-traditional niche has dating sites that allow men to pay for a date with a woman. As I understand it, when a man finds a woman's profile and picture interesting, he asks for a date, she sets a price, and if he is willing to pay the price she asks, he pays the dating

service for that date including her price and whether or not the date works out, the woman is paid the amount he deposited with the dating service.

Now, I know what you are thinking...that when a man pays for a date, he probably expects sex; and that may be true; however, a woman can specify that sex is not part of the deal, that it is only a 'getting to know you' dinner at a (ritzy) location.

Will that work? I don't know; but you can quiz such dating services beforehand and also set your parameters clearly in your profile. You may get takers. You may not. See if you can find 'reviews' of the dating site.

Yes, yes, I know this sounds like

old-fashioned prostitution with a dating service acting as pimp; and I feel sure there are professionals who use such websites. Vice squads may be patrolling these websites, too, for that matter. I don't know.

Some years back, one of the major television news magazines ran a story about a similar website for very high-end men who paid substantial amounts of money (in the thousands) for a date with women, including some women who had been centerfold models in men's magazines.

The story on the television show centered on a super-wealthy man who paid for an introduction to a centerfold

beauty and he became so obsessed with her that he lavished her with extremely expensive jewelry, a condominium, expensive sport car and so on, just to keep her dating him.

Eventually, he used up his millions by plying her with whatever he wanted and whatever she wanted. According to the story, he then resorted to illegal means to get money required to satisfy her. In time, he was arrested, sent to prison, and the gifts given to the woman were confiscated to repay those he had wronged financially.

So, neither one of them came out well in the story, but that does not mean all situations end that way.

The TV show interviewed the operator of the dating service who declared the website was simply a dating introduction service—and protested that no one had to engage in sex. So much for disclaimers! But it seems to be a working method for some pay-as-you-date services.

In all fairness, if such a dating service is allowed for men; there should be such dating services for wealthy women to select men. I am an absolute feminist for equality for women in every way.

Most niche dating services are for both men and women and center primarily on pairing couples who have

the same passion for a particular niche, whether horses, chess, sailing, or biking. The most important lesson for you is to zero in on what I call a Rich Niche for dating sites based on expensive, very expensive hobbies or activities.

Your Online Dating Profile

Your online dating profile consists of Keywords, Types of Pictures to Post, and a few open variables. Build your online dating profile according to your relationship goals. We all know that if you post nude or scantily dressed pictures of yourself, you will attract people (and maybe the law) who

consider you a gigolo or a courtesan.

True, Rich clients sometimes fall in love with a gigolo or courtesan and marry the person; but just as often, they do not.

I don't judge you, either way, just be sure your online profile reflects your true relationship goals. And remember that what goes online may last forever or longer than you want it to.

So, the **BIGGEST QUESTION** for you to answer before posting online is **“What type of relationship do I want with an RM?”**

The Type Of

Relationship You Want

You want an RM—a Rich Mate. Good for you. That means whatever you want should be specified in an upscale setting—BUT FIRST—find postings by the types of people you want. You can clearly tell if the person is upscale by such things as grammar, clarity, interests, hobbies, career, and what the person reveals about herself or himself.

Study their keywords and profiles and what they seem to really want. Those will be some of the key words for you to use in structuring your own keywords and profiles.

Do you want marriage? If so, read on about my research on stating it.

Do you want children?

Do you just want someone to help you financially—a sugar mama or sugar daddy?

Do you care if the RM is already married?

Do you want someone who will help you through college or help you to achieve certain goals?

Do you want someone to teach you finance and money management as part of your relationship?

Do you want someone to bankroll your business or career as part of your relationship?

Do you just want to experience expensive fun?

Do you want to be a travel

companion with someone?

What do you need?

What do you want?

Once you are sure, add to your online dating profile the keywords and pictures toward that goal.

Pros & Cons Of 'Marriage' As A Profile Keyword

There is a true story of a pretty thirty-something divorcee who plainly wrote that she wanted to marry an older man, preferably a widower, who had money and that they could share a good life together. Her picture was not sexy;

but just very, very pretty. A fifty-something widower who was very lonely since his wife died and had not gotten out and about to find someone felt this might work. He married her and they were quite happy until she found someone else.

On the other hand... Most people of both sexes are hoping to find a relationship that is marriage-worthy; HOWEVER—and this is a big however—announcing it upfront puts instant pressure on a relationship.

If an RM asks you what you are looking for in a relationship, instead of saying ‘marriage,’ just say something like, “At the moment, I am open to discovery in a relationship.”

A comment of that nature is nice and vague and a little intriguing.

The truth is—**when everything clicks for both of you, marriage takes care of itself**—especially if you take it to the altar while it is in a new phase; and if you keep cultivating new RMs to date until the very day you marry.

Keep pressure off a relationship by using other words that describe the interaction between a couple that you enjoy—because that is what you will want in a marriage and if you find such an interaction, it stands a chance of marriage. And concentrate on sounding likable, interested in life and people—keep it light.

You can post a variety of profiles

on different sites, if you want to try it both ways. Most people are members of more than one dating site.

If you are asked if you are looking for marriage in the Dating Service's Information-gathering, it is okay to put yes, if you are. If a potential mate asks, it is a good idea to say, "If a relationship fits," or "When the time is right." If asked what that means, just say, "I think two people know." Keep pressure at bay in the beginning so a relationship can have a chance of finding its own level.

What To Reveal About You

Your online dating profile is a resume—no different from filling in a job resume that reveals you are the right person for the job. A dating resume is more of a two-way street. You are weeding out whoever applies for a relationship with you; and you are revealing the type of relationship person you are.

Remember the right words are keys that can open any door. The right words are the magic words to release the wishes in Aladdin's lamp.

Spelling and Grammar. Write your profile first in your computer on Word or Pages and give it a spell-check and grammar-check. Bad grammar or bad spelling is a serious put off to the kinds

of people you want to meet. To keep it light and yet important, pretend you are at party and you meet someone. What would you say about yourself?

It is important to stand out in some way.

Your Intro – begin with a question or a challenge. “Do you like” or “Would you like” or “I would like to” – and **make it a twosome activity** such as:

Do you like Salsa Dancing?

Would love to hold hands and witness a sunrise over the Pyramids?

I like morning jogs and an invigorating shower before work. If you do, too, it might be fun to share morning jogs and

invigorating showers before work
someday.

Would you like midnight picnics
on the beach?

Do you like dressing up to attend
Opening Nights at the Opera?

Is sailing your hot button?

Do you like horseback riding?

Are you an avid golfer?

Do you like cooking breakfast
together in the wee hours after a
night on the town?

Would you like to waltz in
Vienna?

Do you love large dogs? Persian
cats, etcetera

Would love a pillow fight that
ends in tickling at a suite in the

Ritz Carlton in Paris.

Sweep me off my feet. If you are successful, sociable, humorous and physically fit, I would like to discover a fun side of you and a serious side of you on a personal level.

In other words, entice with words that are light, romantic, and fun.

What NOT To Reveal About You

Do not get into health problems, family problems, or indicate in any way that you have had crummy marriages or been abused or otherwise mistreated by

a former lover or spouse. **Never depict yourself as a victim or you will attract victimizers.** Have too much *self-respect and a sense of self-decency* not to show anger or bitterness toward the gender you are seeking for a relationship—i.e. ‘women are bitches’ or ‘she ran off with my best friend.’ No, no, and double no!

Your Pictures

Have a headshot picture that depicts you as happy or enthusiastic or full of life. Give the date of your picture. If you can show more than one picture, add a photo that shows you ‘doing something’ such jogging or lifting weights or sailing—you get the idea.

Once a relationship begins, think twice before you exchange risqué pictures by text or email. You have no idea who may end up seeing them or how it may affect your future. And if you do, be damn sure the RM is sending risqué pictures of herself/himself, that it is not just you.

Finding RMs Who Interest You

NEVER zero in on just one RM. Never. Relationships are a numbers game. You should be able to evaluate 100 or more pictures and profiles in about an hour. If you just go by pictures,

initially, you can do it in about twenty minutes. Another fifteen minutes, you can trim it down to half. Then, choose the best 25 profiles and pictures to send your response.

Safety First. Be sure to Bing and Google any person who interests you and wants to meet you for a date. Then, check social media to see if anything has been posted about this person. Do your homework.

You should also know that some men claim to have been robbed by a woman they met online and brought home. Others have found themselves led on by lies a woman gave about herself. Safety first.

And you should know that some women have filed rape cases after a date with a man met online. At least one Traditional Dating Service was sued for a proven rape case.

And by no means should you ever think that just because you connected with someone on a Christian or Jewish or other Morality Based Dating Site that the person actually lives up to those tenets (although the profile may claim to do so).

Online Dating Sites—Traditional or Niche—may post that they do or do not conduct background checks. Be sure you know where the dating site stands on this issue.

So take every precaution and—as with any new date, do the following (and more):

—Meet the person in a public location—always an EXPENSIVE restaurant or private club, if the person has indicated membership in one. Specifying an expensive, upscale restaurant, bar or club will give a faker second thoughts about meeting you. A woman or man who is Rich will be impressed that you know the place and she or he will be comfortable in that setting. Too,

—Possibly have a friend (opposite sex friend...otherwise, a same sex friend might decide he or she wants to meet this person for a

relationship), go to the location separately, to see the two of you together, possibly to take a smart phone picture.

—Gather as much verifiable information about this person as possible (jobs, marital/divorce status, children are all available on public records. Find out the RM's education and hometown and verify it the next day before scheduling another date.

—Do not give your address. If it turns out you do not like this person, it could be a problem, if she or he follows you, stalks you, or is simply a pest!

—For the same reason, stick with

emails, not phone numbers or texts until you are convinced of the safety of this person. Use the dating service's messaging 'connection' and if you do give an email, give one that you can delete without a thought if you do not like the person. Do not give an important personal or business email.

RESPOND ONLY IF A PICTURE IS PROVIDED ALONG WITH THE PROFILE. The more complete the person's profile, the more serious that person is about finding a meaningful relationship. And, after all, you are providing a picture and profile; so you deserve the same from anyone else.

RESPOND ONLY TO

‘ROMANTIC’ PROFILES that showcase ‘couple’ interests, i.e. dancing, tennis, cuddling, toasting champagne on a Mediterranean cruise.”

After that, you can judge those who respond back through a few emails before setting a casual date for lunch at a chic spot in the financial district or cocktails at an upscale spot for Happy Hour.

This initial meeting is critical for finding out verifiable information. If the person has a career, if so, what career, where, how long? Find out the general area of residence, if previously married or still married. Education level and schools can reveal a lot, too.

GPS Mobile Dating Apps

Apps (applications) for mobile devices are available for ‘instant dates’ wherever you are.

For example, you may be visiting a new city – or just out on the town for a night out with your buddies. You decide to hook-up and use a dating app that locates singles who are in the area where you are through Global Positioning Service GPS.

They send a query to their members in the area and when someone agrees to meet you, the App notifies you

and maps where to go.

Frankly, this sounds scary as hell to me and I do not recommend it; but if you are a woman and you opt for it, be sure:

—You are with a group of friends who will accompany you there

—You are in an upscale area and you are meeting in a public place that is expensive—possibly a private club where the person you are meeting is a member

—When you meet the person and introduce your friends, one of them takes a smart phone picture. The one the App has may not be the same person.

—You DO NOT leave the premises

with this person. Do not tell where you live or work at this time. Use all safety good sense measures. If he has possibilities, set up lunch for the next week.

There are also Dating Apps based on Facebook or Instagram. Dating Apps are a growing market so you should never have the problem of being alone, anyone—as long as you keep safety as your number one priority—and targeting upscale dates as often as possible.

Most of all, keep going places and getting involved in activities that bring you into contact with RMs in the flesh.

*Upscale
Matchmakers and
Rich Singles Clubs*

*“Use every safe avenue
available to meet RMs; and
do not
focus on just one method.”*

—*Ginie Sayles*

The Rich DO use online dating services; and they also use private matchmakers and they join ‘country club-like singles organizations that you have to be Rich enough to join.

Private Matchmakers

Some matchmakers have a private cache of Rich clients with very strict requirements of what they want in mates.

The RMs are shown photographs and given a profile of each candidate who wants to meet an RM.

There can be several thousand dollars for a private introduction between an RM to a willing candidate the RM wants to meet. If it is a one-time date, only, the payment may be \$5,000 or so. And, of course, there is a retainer fee to the matchmaker that can range from \$10,000 to \$20,000 for ongoing introductions.

If the RM ends up marrying one of the matchmaker's candidates, the RM pays \$50,000 to \$150,000 or more to the matchmaker, depending on the contract. If the RM just lives with the person without marriage, there may be a lesser

charge of \$25,000 or so; however, if they live together beyond a year, the matchmaker may be entitled to receive the lesser marriage rate of \$50,000, depending on how the contract reads.

If the match ends up as a dating relationship with no plans for living together and no plans to marry; the RM may be required to pay \$10,000 to \$15,000.

These contracts can vary, depending on the actual services rendered by the matchmaker and specific terms agreed upon.

Most upscale matchmakers do not require candidates to pay to join—although some of them do—but if so, the fee is nominal because what they want

are candidates to showcase to their Rich female and male clients. They look for—and sometimes advertise for—candidates who fit a profiles that fit their Rich clients' requests.

Expensive Singles Clubs

Most cities have a few private social clubs for upper class or upscale men and women. Usually, there are 2 requirements:

First: You have the money to join

Second: You are approved by the members.

However, most private social clubs only require (1) You have the money!

I dated a prominent attorney who was a member of two such clubs. Frankly, most members of one club were members of the other.

The clubs create a very active social life for its Rich members. They may take cruises together, ski in the hottest ski lodge together; meet for breakfast several times a week in a chic setting; host a formal cocktail party or dinner once a month; always have a holiday celebration and on and on and on.

The **plus** side of it is that members

develop friendships and have a full social life.

The **minus** side of it is that over time, the ‘regular’ members end up “married to the club.” Really! The old time regulars do not feel the need to settle down with one spouse. They have ‘dated’ each other, slept with each other, and played musical chairs more than speed dating ever could.

Anytime a new member is welcomed into the club, the old members pounce on the fresh blood. Dating ensues, sex follows, and after a few months, the bloom is off the rose and all that is left is the social comfort of each other but no promising future and possibly a few false hopes. One female

member is still hanging on, hoping a particular male member who enjoys making the rounds will one day settle with her. Sadly, that will not happen.

Yes, there are some RMs who join, meet another new member, date, get serious, get married and leave the club. But such RMs are new and join with a purpose of marriage and do not get derailed by the club as a ‘marriage substitute.’

If you date one RM who is a member of such clubs, you probably will meet other members and not have to pay to join – hoorah – and still enjoy many of the perks of membership.

To prove my point that members need new blood, there is usually an

annual or bi-annual cocktail party that allows members to invite new people (you) to the party. Always go. You may or may not get involved with one of the members; but a member who is interested in you will take you places that do not include the club members and these new places will allow you to meet new RMs who are not members.

Online Personal Ads

Be very careful if you decide to use online personal ads. Remember that if Safety Is Your Number One Priority At All Times. If you go this route, consider placing 3 different ads at one time and see which one pulls.

In all ads, include your age range, weight, height, hair and eye color.

Ad 1: Specify your interest in the possibility of marriage and that money is important to you; and tell what you have to offer as a spouse of someone Rich.

Ad 2: Do not specify your interest in marriage at all. Instead, do specify your interest in money. If you are a man, depict yourself as dashing (romantic and well-traveled) and desirable. If you are a woman, depict yourself as very glamorous and desirable. For both men and women, be a bit elusive by stating that you are looking for the right mate who can hold you down. This can be

GREAT!

Ad 3: Do not specify either marriage or money. Instead, specify a lifestyle you anticipate as part of a relationship. Keep it specific and short—i.e. a mansion, complete with butler and chauffeur. Be sure to say you are not very good at doting on others.

Have the website publishing the ad to use their address or a blind box address. Never have your address or telephone number published. You can have an email address that you never use for anything else.

When you meet an RM this way, be sure it is in a public place and have a friend sitting close by but not with you.

When You Respond To An Ad

All ads will ask you to email a picture of yourself. Be careful what you send. The person is a stranger. You do not know what the person may do with the picture. All ads will ask you to write about yourself. NEVER do that, either. The person is a stranger.

Instead, write one, brief response about yourself that you will send to every ad you respond to—no matter what the ad says it wants from you. Include your age range, your weight, your height, hair, and eye color.

Sample:

Hi—I liked your ad. I am 5'4", black hair, blue eyes, late thirties, 111 lbs. I have neither time nor inclination to write detailed, personal information about myself. Let's get acquainted via email—maybe meet later for nachos.

Jenny

jenny@a blind email

address.com

(an email you can easily delete later if needed)

If you have an unusual name spelling as I do, then you may want to misspell your name initially. You can correct it later if you get to know the

person. Use an email address that you do not use only for ads and that you can delete later.

Again, never give your address. Meet in public with people around and people who know where you are. Never leave that location with someone new. You must use every safety precaution and keep safety as your number one priority.

Consider having a friend with you (or hovering in the background) each time you get together until you know enough about this person and your friends know who the person is. Verify any information the person gives you about him/herself.

Talk by telephone first and meet in

a public place in the daytime and in a non mood-altering situation, not in bars.

When you talk by telephone, only talk a few minutes. Many people kill the potential of the relationship by telling too much to each other on the telephone and then get together the first time and have nothing to say.

Safety First: Frankly, I suggest you have a friend go separately to the place where you are meeting the person (You may want to choose a friend of the opposite sex, since a same sex friend might just decide to meet the person).

You and your friend will agree in advance not to say anything to each other. Your friend is only there as a

safety net, to note a complete description of the person you are meeting, automobile license number, et cetera.

Your friend may take a mobile phone picture or video of the two of you together without being noticed and also of the license plates of the RMs car. You may want to have an agreement with a friend that you do this favor for each other.

Remember that money does not make a person moral so do not assume that because an RM arrives in a luxury car and is perhaps well-dressed that you are safe. While talking to the person you are meeting, gather information you can verify and verify it!

If a person will lie to you about

his/her work, the person will probably lie to you about a lot of other things. So you may want to telephone the personnel office of the company listed on the business card or that he or she has mentioned. Pretend to be someone else—a loan officer or something—and verify the person's position.

However, the person could have given you someone else's name or business card, so mention a brief description.

"John Doe, a young, blond male, applied for a loan with our company. He said he is president of XYZ corporation. I am verifying if he is Mr. Doe in that position."

You can also telephone and ask

for her or him, using a pseudonym and when he or she answers, you can hang up if you recognize the voice. If not, verify who the person is and tell them that is what you are doing. You are certainly within your right.

Meet A Specific RM
**—Without the RM
Knowing
You Did It On
Purpose—**

“You can meet an RM without that person even knowing you

did it on purpose.”

—Ginie Sayles

When you want to meet a specific person, that means you must learn to be **deliberate**. Strategy is your mental game. And, remember, tell no one what you are doing—even if you feel proud of yourself when it works! Secrecy is your best friend.

How To Meet A Specific

Person

This requires that you:

Gather general information about the person

Create a Ploy based on the information you gathered— which means to ‘position yourself’ so he/she can meet you.

If you feel insecure about your ploy, practice whatever you intend to do on someone you are not interested in, in order to work the bugs out before trying it on the person you are interested in meeting.

Gather Information

Study the RM you want to meet. Read everything you can about the RM. This may take a little detective work on your part—including taking a day or two off work in order to follow the RM to see where she or he goes to lunch, works out, has tea, etcetera. **Please do not allow this to turn into stalking.** This is merely preliminary research to find ways to meet your RM. Many times you "luck" into hearing about a restaurant where a certain celebrity or wealthy person has lunch or dinner. In either

case, once you know where the person goes, observe the person from a distance to see what the person responds to.

Bait The Hook

Dress in the clothing style that equals the class quality this RM responds to. Your clothing is your first body language to an observer; so let it say what you are.

Position Yourself To Be Seen

If you are in a restaurant where the RM goes, sit in a clear view to the

RM. I mention restaurants a lot because an RM is going to be there a minimum of thirty (30) minutes and probably longer. You have more time to be seen.

Be Approachable With Energy

The handsomest man or the most beautiful woman can seem boring if there is no energy in the handsome or beautiful face.

People—including RMs—are attracted to energy. Find ways to shed quiet energy. Let's look as one way you can do that.

Go alone to the restaurant because you are more approachable, alone.

However, you want the RM to see your personality.

Use the waiter as a prop. You do not appear to flirt with the waiter; nevertheless, you quietly ask the waiter questions about the menu, and respond at least once with soft laughter. I do not care if the waiter simply said, "Yes, it is served with hollandaise sauce," laugh. You want the energy of your face, body, and interaction to make you noticeable.

Pre-Test

If you feel too nervous about any ploy, then try it out on someone else that you are less interested in. This way, you

can work out the bugs and develop greater confidence and naturalness in the messages you are sending.

Just see if you can do it.

Variations On The Theme

If tracking down your RM's lunch habits is impossible, but you are able to find another turf for meeting your RM-of-interest; then, take all this same strategy and apply it appropriately to that setting.

I was told of one woman who found out by accident where an older celebrity lived. He had a house on the

beach.

Knowing his weakness for young, shapely bodies, she donned a skimpy bikini and parked her own young, shapely body on the sand outside his house.

Day after day she came in bright bikinis. She stretched and angled her body in provocative ways as if she were merely sunning and considered herself to be alone.

After a few weeks of this, his butler appeared at her side one day, with an invitation from the celebrity for lunch. And yes, she married him.

You can also use a Direct Process or an Indirect Process to meet an RM, according to which one is more

comfortable for you.

Direct Process

A friend of mine stopped a man in passing, one day.

"Excuse me," she said to him, "But I pass you just about every day and I would like to get to know you, if you are interested."

He really had not noticed her before, but decided he was interested. They dated a short while, lived together six months, and married.

Hopefully, you are comfortable meeting someone that way. It can work out well. But, there are times when you

may feel uncomfortable being direct with your interest.

However, just because you feel uncomfortable being direct, does not mean you should forego meeting an RM who interests you; so the following strategy can get you through those moments, comfortably.

Indirect Process— Sleuthing

With this method, you approach an RM in such a way that the RM does not even realize you did it.

As an example, I am going to walk you through a party setting

(although you can use this technique just about anywhere) to tell you how to meet the person you want to meet.

On Your Way To A Party

Look fabulous and then follow these rules:

Set A Secret Personal Goal:

Decide that you are going to initiate contact or a conversation with a minimum of eight RMs.

The Party Is Practice: It is your secret game with yourself. You are learning to be deliberate—which is vital

to achieving goals, such as meeting and marrying RMs—and you tell yourself that you are practicing your skills.

Your attitude is that you are going to see if you can meet 8 people of the opposite sex. Since it is a secret goal, there is no egg on your face if you don't because it is “just practice.” It is okay if something does not work when it is just practice and you will get better and better.

And, aaah what a pleasure of confidence steals across your face each time you carry it off. And if you just keep doing it, you will eventually carry it off!

At The Party

Recheck your Physical Appearance in the restroom.

Be sure your posture is exceptionally "up and back". You can be the most noticeable person at the party just by your posture.

Generate a slight sense of excitement (energy) in your personality as you move through the party, spotting the RMs you want to meet.

Make it a numbers game. Decide to meet several RMs. You can defeat yourself by committing too quickly to an interest in just one RM. You will be infinitely more successful with RMs if you 'collect' several, whether or not you are particularly interested in them.

If The Person You Want To Meet Is In A Group Of People

Let's say you notice a black haired man you want to meet. He's surrounded by a group of people, talking. Here is what you can do!

Watch who stands next to him.

In this case, let's say that standing next to him is a silver-haired man.

Watch who talks to him. He talks to a rotund little man in the group quite a bit. He talks to an older couple. He talks to the silver-haired gentleman...

Wait until someone he was talking to leaves the group. You talk to that person.

Let's say, the rotund little man moves out of the group. You walk over to him in a casual way, smile, and say, "Hi, I am your name." Give him a chance to respond and if he does not supply his name, then ask "And what is your name?" (*note: It is easy to meet people you are not interested in meeting—however, give yourself points because you have successfully met this man, too!*)

He gives a sharp nod and says his name. It is obvious he thinks you are coming on to him.

Please keep in mind that you do not give a damn what he thinks. He is only a source of information to you and you are talking to him for your purposes only.

4. Ask about a person standing next to the man you want to meet.

For instance, you can ask a question about the silver-haired man who

is standing next to the black-haired man you are interested in. Never ask directly about the man you are really interested in meeting.

You can say, "I just saw you in the group where that silver-haired gentleman is. Someone told me he is a

lawyer. I thought he might know my brother, since my brother is a lawyer, but I do not want to embarrass myself. Do you know if he is a lawyer?"

Now he knows you are not interested in him, so you should feel better. He will probably say, "No, he's not a lawyer. He owns a medical supply chain."

You say, "Oh. Hmmm. Well, I wonder if they were talking about the black-haired man standing next to him. Is HE a lawyer?"

Again, he will probably shake his head and say, "No, he is the country's largest manufacturer of tennis rackets."

5. Change the subject and leave.

Laughing, say, "Well, I do not know who they were talking about. Well, I enjoyed meeting you. I hope you enjoy the party" and move on.

6. Talk to a few other people before approaching the group where your black-haired man is, go to the restroom and check your posture and grooming again.

Rev up your energy level and radiate happiness. Return to the party. Circulate and enter the group of people where your black-haired man is.

7. Position Yourself next to a person standing on either side of the RM you want to meet.

Once you enter the group, who do you think you will stand next to? That is right! The silver-haired man that you are not interested in.

You could stand next to the person on the other side of the black-haired man, but you already have information about the silver-haired man that gives you a natural conversation tool.

You move into the circle of people, forcing yourself to stand exactly **IN LINE** with everyone on both sides of you—not behind the line of people, which seems timid.

8. Do Not Look At The RM who interests you. sip your drink. glance about. wait for a natural wedge in the

talking.

When the silver-haired man next to you is silent, turn slightly to him and quietly say, "Someone told me you are in the medical supply business."

This gets you quietly included in the talk. Gradually widen your talk to include people on the other side of you.

9. Become Part Of The Party and Chat inconspicuously. At some point, someone will ask you a question about you. At that point, you just happen to mention something about 'tennis.'

You will not have to worry about how to meet your black-haired man then. Everyone in the group will immediately direct your attention to him. You can

naturally ask where and/or even ask for a card before you leave.

Meet An RM

Who Is With A Date

*“You are not responsible for
someone else’s relationship.”*

—Ginie Sayles

If you want to meet an RM who is with a date—and if the person is not married, then don't let a date stop you!

Remind yourself that:

You are not The American Red Cross.

You also are not responsible for anyone else's relationship.

You do not forego meeting someone who could be perfect for you just because the person is with someone else.

The person is not married! As long as an RM is not legally married, the RM is available unless the RM makes it clear a serious relationship exists with this person. RMs who are not married can leave a relationship for another person more easily than if they are married (this is true, whether or not we like it).

You should never throw away potential happiness by presuming that you know what someone's relationship is.

A couple may be at the party

together, but:

They may have been fixed up on a blind date.

They may be friends.

One may be crazy about the other, but it takes two to make it happen. If it is a one-way relationship, believe me, you will not keep them together by not making your move. They will end, anyway.

They may be on the verge of breaking up.

They may be tolerating each

other until someone better (that is you) comes along.

They may be madly in love. In that case, neither one will even SEE you while you are talking to them, much less respond. It is still good practice for you.

The woman you are protecting will not like you more for it. If the shoe were on the other foot, she might take advantage of your date.

If this were a job, would you turn down a promotion into the position that a person of the

same sex whom you do not know well is going to lose whether you take it or not? Of course not.

My point is—trash the guilt, do not let guilt trash you and your love life. This is a competitive world and you are in this world by yourself unless you do something about it.

STEP-BY-STEP METHOD TO MEET AN RM WHO IS WITH A DATE

1. The Secret To Success

Is The Word Secret™

Once you have spotted an RM you want to meet, do not tell anyone! People blow their chances more times than they know by confiding their interest in someone.

When you tell a friend, your friend wants to "help." Even if your friend has enough sense not to say anything about your interest to anyone else; your friend may introduce you with give-away enthusiasm or with a transparently meaningful glance toward you.

Just knowing that you are interested can cause your friend to become awkward or self-conscious

when the three of you are talking together.

It is not fair to any of you—especially you. And, it can be deadly to your goals.

You want to test the water first with this RM's potential.

Let's say, you have spotted an RM who is with a date, a red haired woman. No wedding rings. No “we're-on-another-planet-in-love” body language.

2. Collect Data Indirectly

For this exercise, we will pretend you are a woman and you spot an RM who is with a date.

Go to your party hostess, whom we'll call Sue and ask about the woman who is with the man you are interested in. Do NOT ask about the man who interests you.

Why should you not ask about the man? Well, let's see what could happen if you do. If you say, "Sue, who is that great looking guy with the redhead," Sue probably would respond in a slightly cool tone, "Oh, that is John...something...I cannot remember. Jane Doe (the redhead) brought him as her date."

Then if you went on to say, "Do you know if he and Jane are simpatico? I really would like to meet him," Sue would probably force a polite smile to

hide her bristling that you put her in this situation.

Likely her reply would be, "Well, dear, I really do not know how involved Jane is with him. I'll see what I can find out for you..."

Not only have you been a beastly guest to have put her in a moment like this; but what if she really did (and I doubt she would) introduce you, or mention it to the man, or tip off Jane?

Then, you still have to play out your little drama of interest in him under her nose. She would be fully aware of the outcome—your success or your failure—and neither one is good for your potential friendship with Sue.

Sue now will not trust you. She

will not invite you to future parties; and she will inwardly sneer if you fail.

3. Utilize Relationship Psychology

Success has its power in secrecy. Any success; but especially relationships. The less anybody knows about your love interests, the better your chances of making them happen the way you want them to.

Plus, there is a psychology, a perception of you as either being successful with the opposite sex or a failure with the opposite sex.

That perception of you is

perpetuated word-of-mouth to your benefit or to your detriment.

And do you know who builds that perception of you? You do.

Every time you tell an interest you have that does not pan out, every time you tell how bad a relationship was, you create a failure fragrance, a failure mystique that perpetuates more failure.

Do not do it again. The Rich like winners. You will be perceived as a winner if you do not play out your losses to a full house, or in this case, to a friend or hostess.

Example For Success

Go to your hostess and say, "Sue,

who is the lovely redhead standing next to your bright floral vase?" *You are asking about the woman who is with the man you are interested in meeting. You have not mentioned the man.*

Sue glances, and then smiles, saying, "Oh, that is Jane Doe. Isn't she pretty, though?"

"Yes," you agree, and then ask, "What does she do?"

"Jane is in real estate. A real dynamo, I have heard." Sue says.

At this point, you switch the subject so she does not wonder much about it.

"Oh, well she looks familiar. By the way, Sue, I am having a marvelous time at your party."

You chat a few minutes and then go your way. Sue has no idea she has just armed you with information to meet Jane's date. Sue considers you a charming guest and will definitely invite you to future parties.

Now—when you approach the man you are interested in meeting, completely ignore him.

Instead, direct your attention to Jane Doe, the date of the RM you are interested in meeting.

Looking her in the eyes, smile and extend your hand saying, "Jane, I am your name. Sue told me you are in real

estate. What company are you with?"

Sue will light up and think, "Client!" and you begin any kind of tale for interaction that you want to.

Do not glance at or flirt with the man you are interested in meeting. Stay focused on Jane. If you want her man, fine; but do not put her in the embarrassing position of having you flirt with each other right under her nose—and do not put her in the triumphant position of his possibly rejecting your flirtation right under her nose!

Instead, focus entirely on Jane—no side glances at him—and see if she introduces you.

If She Does not Introduce You

If Jane does not introduce you (rude, but smart little cookie), continue talking a minute.

Then, still looking at Jane, say, "Well, Jane, I am glad I met you, I hope we...Oh, I excuse me! (as you "seem" to suddenly see her date for the first time) I am your name. What' is your name?" to her date!

Again, no flirting. You just seem to be correcting a minor social faux pas of not introducing yourself.

He may say, "John Smith."

You ask, "Nice to meet you, John. Are you in real estate with Jane?"

He may say no and tell what he does. If he just says no, but does not volunteer his profession, then ask. "What do you do?"

As soon as he tells you enough for you to be able to track him down in a week or two, then say, "Well, I am glad I met both of you. Jane, I hope to see you again sometime."

If She Introduces You

If she is polite enough to introduce you to her date, then, when you do look at him, be sure your expression is completely non-flirting.

Simply extend your hand to him,

saying, "It is nice to meet you, John. Are you in real estate with Jane?"

If he says no and does not elaborate, ask, "Well, what do you do?"

As soon as he supplies his profession, you may ask one or two questions more to clarify where his office is or what his company's name is, seeming to be merely polite, and then say, "That is nice. Well, I am glad I met you."

Turn your eyes and full attention back to Jane as if you are interested in her as a person and not her date, adding, "Jane, I am so glad I met you. You are as charming as Sue said. Hope I see you again."

Immediately, GO. No side looks

at John.

You now know where he can be found during a week day when Jane isn't around. You can begin setting strategy to be in that vicinity around noon or closing time—perhaps in the hallway, waiting for the elevator.

Seem not to recognize him, at first. See if he is the first one to say, "Didn't I meet you at Sue's party a week (a few days/weeks/etc) ago?" And if he does not say it, you do, after seeming to notice him and then looking puzzled and finally asking.

Believe me, these methods can work!

If you would like a different ploy, you can also spend some time watching

unseen to see where he goes after work, which happy hour bar, which restaurant for lunch, and so forth.

YOU come up with a strategy. You come up with a plan. Deploy the plan and feel the excitement when it works!

That is the fun of conquest. It is deliberate. It is a mental game. It is exciting.

*Gimmicks
To Meet The Rich*

*“RM goals seem easier to
attain if pursued in a spirit of
fun!”*

—Ginie Sayles

Gimmicks are for fun. Gimmicks seem to be most successful when you fit into one or all of the following:

—Between relationships.

—Have a relationship or relationships going on but you are not sure where the relationship is going or you feel there is something missing.

—Have a sense of fun mischief so that even if you have a relationship that is secure, you just like the game of testing to see if you can make something happen.

However, be prepared that the gimmicks may not work. That is the thrill of it all—that it may or it may not work.

One gimmick that did NOT work for me the first time I tried it—but that DID work for me the second time I tried it was tic-tac-toe.

One of my girlfriends and I went to a popular and unbelievably crowded club one night. There were no tables and we were lucky to be able to inch our way up to the bar.

Standing next to me was a well-dressed, good-looking man (I think they are all good looking) who seemed to be preoccupied.

"How can I meet this man," I

wondered, "He seemed completely absorbed in his own thoughts, as if he weren't even there.

Casting about for an idea, I realized that I did not want just to say something to him. I wanted to do something different. If it worked, fine. If it didn't, fine.

Taking a pen from my purse, I drew two vertical bars crossed by two horizontal bars on a cocktail napkin. I placed an X on one of the spaces, put the pen on top of it and scooted it in front of him.

He looked at it, smiled, picked up the pen, put an O on a space, replaced the pen on the napkin and scooted it back in front of me.

Back and forth we went playing tic-tac-toe without a word. At last he won—and he really did win—I do not "let" someone win, if I can win.

He stepped back from the bar, looking me full in the face with a broad smile while he dug in his pocket, took out a wad of money, placed it on the bar next to his glass, turned and walked out!

So it did not work. That is the risk. But how bad a risk was it? Who cared? It was fun and kind of funny whether he responded or not. It was more interesting to my own self-image than a successful coup that was ordinary.

A few weeks later, my girlfriend and I went out again.

The club she chose this time was

so cavernous and so dark that after we were seated at a table, time passed and we had not met anyone.

Thinking of what to do, I recalled my tic-tac-toe effort and, once again, drew a tic-tac-toe bar on a cocktail napkin.

Calling the waiter over, I handed him both the napkin and my pen.

"See this?" I asked.

He nodded.

"Give it to...anybody!" I said with a shrug.

The waiter nodded again, turned, and disappeared into the darkness.

A few minutes later, two dark figures emerged from the dark and moved toward us, stopped at our table

and introduced themselves.

They were terrific. We invited them to join us and the one carrying my tic-tac-toe napkin finished the game with me.

My girlfriend and I ended up dating these two men for several months.

So it worked this time. Again, if it had not worked, it was still worth a try.

*Audacious
First Conversation*

- What To Say -

*“Create a ‘Positive
Challenge’ as early as
possible in your first
conversation with an RM.”*

—*Ginie Sayles*

Once you are face to face with RMs, HOW do you interact with them? Even if your RM is a celebrity, conversation rules are basically the same as with anyone else. You SAY something. You speak in the same manner you would to anyone else.

Keep your posture great. It makes you sexy. Seem happy about your life. **Not** smiling, just ‘glowing,’ as if you have a happy secret.

Remember, it does not matter what you say, just as long as you say

something—and, just as long as it is even mildly appropriate.

How will you know if it is appropriate? It is appropriate if it is related to what is going on or the situation, and said with a light cheerfulness.

Important—you either keep moving or pause with body language that shows you are only pausing, not stopping to try to make a relationship out of it on the spot.

This is your manner with everyone, including RMs—with one...little...hitch. You create a positive challenge as early as possible in the conversation with an RM.

If you are just "nice," the RM

won't remember you. If you create a small, positive challenge to your RM by something you say during your initial conversation you will stand out.

A positive challenge is automatic if you are a bit audacious. That means you say something unexpected.

For example, one wealthy rancher/lawyer I met at a cocktail party did not seem all that interested in any of the women present and was just chatting politely with each one.

Our conversation was rather boring and I did not think he was very interested in me, anymore than he was the other women.

So, when he was telling me that he did not fit the rancher mold of being

macho; but that he was a sensitive man, I interrupted him.

“I am,” I said.

He paused and asked, “You are... what?”

“I am macho,” I answered.

His face registered surprise and then he laughed. It was completely unexpected and he liked it.

I smiled and then excused myself to talk to other people but after a few minutes, he joined me and asked if he could take me to lunch the next day. I told him, no; but that I would have lunch with him 2 days later.

We did go to lunch and our relationship was fun and exciting; and it was a relationship I would not have had

if I had not been audacious – which creates a positive challenge—in the first conversation.

Notice, I was not playing hard-to-get, which just leads to frustrating emotional games. I was being available but making an unexpected comment that separated me from the other women who were there.

You can do this, too, and you can do it every bit as well as I did. Just notice what is being said and take an unexpected position. You can still be adorable in your manner.

Also, a few minutes after your audacious comment, smile and say you need to speak to a friend who is there and excuse yourself.

If presenting a positive challenge is not your forte, then you must find some interesting way to stand out that separates you from everyone else there. The Rich seek the unique—not the run-of-the-mill, ordinary person.

Remember that Aristotle Onassis said, "Never try to please the Rich." Why? Because it makes you a servant; and because everyone is trying to please them.

Servants are paid to please them. Social climbers and investment or service brokers too often become sycophants, trying to please, please, please the Rich.

Only their equals do not try to

please them. In order to be an equal or at least to appear an equal—which is a must for your goals—then you must set yourself apart from the servants, investment and service brokers, and social climbers who pander, smile, and nod, and go along with the Rich.

If the RM is a celebrity, it is especially important to stay with down-to-earth human interest talk that you have in common—children, hometowns, school days, pets, etcetera.

Above all, do not ask for an autograph. Do not even mention "Who He/She Is." That makes you just another fan, not an equal.

On the other hand, you must not be

rude. Rudeness labels you as lower social class, period. You simply do not try to please.

Ask questions the RM cannot answer with yes or no and that has nothing to do with the RM's celebrity status, such as the RM's first car...it's color...how long the RM had it...has any other car meant as much to the RM. You get the idea.

Emphasize what you have in common during your initial conversation to build rapport—an interest in opera, say.

It is just as important, though to point out cute ways that you are different from your RM to stimulate interest and

to show that you complement each other.

Always be the first to end a conversation and to move away to talk to others or to leave.

Creating Initial Challenge

Some very simple ways you can create a challenge simply through conversation are:

To gather information about your RM from others who have been talking to your RM—without letting them be aware that you are interested in your RM (very important).

Then you can casually interject

something into a later conversation that your RM is involved in, knowing full well that your RM will respond to it. This is your RMs hot button.

You can also create a mild challenge by putting your RM on the defensive. How? Just listen closely to a position your RM takes on something and disagree.

Be sure you can back up your opposite position with an unusual viewpoint that creates interest.

Do so, in a manner that is not haughty. Also, disagree only on ONE topic or you will just seem like a disagreeable person, period, and that is boorish, not challenging.

Or you can place a small wager

with your RM on something being discussed that will have an outcome within a few days.

This gives you a perfect excuse to call—especially if you lose the bet. You can call and insist on paying your dues over cocktails or coffee. Or if your RM loses, call and insist he pay it over cocktails or coffee.

Do not talk all the time, but do talk. Ask questions from time to time. Look into your RM's eyes as he or she talks and respond in a natural way.

Occasionally do not respond, so that your RM seeks your response.

Talk about human interest topics. You do not have to say anything funny or profound or even half-bright! Think of

how entertainment news focuses on people interests and sells! That is what you do in your conversations. Spotlight the interesting, novel side of people issues.

Weather, food, children, and events that are going on are all good fillers.

Be basically honest, but never admit your life is empty or depict yourself as bored or lonely.

Always seem to have a life you enjoy, filled to the brim with events and projects you are excited about.

NEVER poor mouth. Once a relationship has begun you gradually break into your RM's piggy bank with simple financial expectations that you

Speak up and express—but not for awhile.

And have a purpose in life—or seem to have a purpose. Do not just be obviously waiting for Daddy or Mama Big Bucks to come along and save you from poverty.

That **MAY BE** exactly what you are doing, but do not let it show. Pretend to have a project you are working on—a novel you are writing, an invention—something that can take you a long time—years, even!

Find subtle ways to point up your special qualities and abilities. You know, yourself, you are impressed when you discover something unusual about someone who otherwise seems ordinary.

Do this for yourself to SELL
YOURSELF.

And, whereas, you are nice about others, you should be smart enough not to praise another man or woman who could become your competitor.

It does not make you look gracious. It is dumb. If anything is mentioned about someone, acknowledge the person, nicely, and turn your RM's attention elsewhere.

Never brag about goals you have or plans you are making. You have made a fool of yourself if something prevents it. Remember “The Secret To Success Is The Word Secret™”. Instead, do it in secret, then reveal it in a casual way that blows the socks off your RM.

Negative pessimism, a critical nature—all are out! You keep your conversation and outlook positive and upbeat and sometimes, just sometimes, mysterious.

Reminder: Be the first to end the conversation and to move away to talk to someone else or to leave.

*Refuse To Talk Like
A Loser*

- What Not To Say -

“Your Past belongs to you—if you are smart! Don’t position yourself as a victim.” —Ginie Sayles

Your Past belongs to YOU—if you're smart! The most important advice you can ever take is to never, never, **never tell how badly anyone has treated you**—especially not ex-spouses or former lovers.

If you tell how badly you were treated, you are describing

—how little the person respected you.

—how little you respected yourself to put up with it.

—what you will put up with in

a relationship. You may be swearing you will not put up with it again. Listen, relationships are not that easy to get out of once you are in them. And everybody is nice at first!

Selective Truth

Instead, give your RM something to live up to. When the inevitable question "What happened to your last relationship?" is asked, fudge!

Say that the person you were with was a good person overall. Then give some benign reason or have amnesia or say you do not discuss previous relationships.

Blame a job change, blame a

move to another state, blame PMS, or anything you want to, just **do NOT say**, "My mate cheated on me, stole my money, beat the kids, and kicked the dog."

I know we have all had rotten relationships and we have all made the mistake of confessing our souls to someone who did not turn out any better. But that is my point. Your words reinforce a pattern.

Tell what I call "selective truth." The good truth is just as true as the bad truth. And, frankly, if you are harping on the bad truth, then you are being just as selective about the truth, anyway, only in a negative sense.

Break The Pattern

You have seen men and women who have "patterns" in their relationships. They always date or marry someone who beats them or who runs around on them or something awful.

Well, they created the 'pattern' by telling the new person how the last person treated them.

The new person may even think, "Well, if he cared enough about a woman who treated him that way, then he is going to have to prove to me that he cares even more for me than he did for her by putting up with worse than she did!"

Many of my clients have discovered that this one principle alone has done more to change their relationship patterns than anything else.

Now, if you feel distressed that this prevents real, true honesty and breast-baring intimacy, do not worry. I think it is fine to tell them the full story —**three years after you are married and your relationship patterns are already formed.** Even then, tell the full truth a little at a time in very small doses!

**You Do Not Have To
Justify The End**

Of A Relationship

A woman I know is married to a really good man. He is a great step-father to her children, and he is faithful to her. But after five years, she now wants a divorce.

However, she is caught in the thought process that she must make the other person bad to justify why she wants a divorce, so she now comes up with a list of little things he has done over time (and I do mean little tiny things) to try to justify her divorce.

Memorize this: You do not owe ANYBODY an explanation of why you want a divorce. Yes, you owe it to your spouse; but the less you dwell on it with

your spouse the better, too.

For some reason, we are brought up to think that we must have a ‘justification’ to end a relationship and that we must explain our reasons to justify why it ended; and that is the other person’s fault—and so to justify getting a divorce, the spouse is depicted as a ‘bad person.’ That is not fair to the Ex and it is beneath you.

Do NOT Portray Your Ex a ‘Bad Person’

One of the most “winner” comments I ever heard a woman say was

when she was asked why she divorced her first husband.

She said “Have you ever been involved with someone; and there was nothing wrong with the person, but you were just not happy?”

Well, that is how it became in my first marriage. There was nothing wrong with him or with me. He was a good man and it was not his fault and not mine. I could not help that I was not happy. But it is hard to stay married when you are not happy, even if there is nothing wrong with either of you.”

Then she brightened and said, “But my second husband and I are happier than I ever dreamed anyone could be.”

Winner!

A man who was asked why his marriage failed, said, “We were both good people, basically; but there are some relationships that can last forever and some that cannot. When you are young and inexperienced, you can confuse the two. Like most people, I want to find a relationship that can last forever and I think I will.”

Winner!

A famous man said of divorce, “We grew apart.”

Winner!

Another woman was asked why her marriage failed and she said, “I don’t think it failed. It was a successful marriage as long as it lasted. Just

because a marriage does not work does not mean there is anything wrong with the people in it. It just did not work for the long term; but neither of us considers the time we spent in our marriage as a failure.”

Winner, winner, winner!

The Rich Do Not Like Losers

Very few RMs will treat you any better than the last relationship you describe.

The RM will usually end up treating you the same way because your RM knows you have taken it before, so

you will probably take it again. People are creatures of habit. What people do once, they are more likely to repeat... unless they are learners. To talk about how badly you were treated makes you sound like a loser and Rich people are funny that way — they do not like losers.

You never want to sound like a victim. Victims are not winners.

PART IV

**Romantic
Relationships
With The Rich**

*Romantically
Available Rich*

“You only want RMs who want ‘you.’ Have too much personal pride to want anyone who does not want you.”

—Ginie Sayles

People cannot be absolutely categorized. However, there are some general profiles that can be useful for identifying RMs.

Rich Women

Men who are seeking a female RM for romance have four basic choices:

- 1) Rich Divorcees
- 2) Rich Widows
- 3) Rich Heiresses

4) Rich Women Executives or Entrepreneurs

1. Rich Divorcee

The Rich Divorcee may have helped her husband succeed. However, on their way up the ladder, they grew apart. One or both had affairs, which eventually led to divorce.

This RM is the easiest to find. She frequents popular bars, goes to Happy Hour, joins clubs, goes to parties, takes trips, all in hopes of finding another husband and to fight off loneliness.

She is outgoing, dresses

expensively with a style that is half-way between preppie and sophisticated.

Be sure she lives on income from assets, not alimony payments from her ex-husband; or she may not marry you until the alimony runs out—and that defeats your purpose.

2. Rich Widow

The Rich Widow tends to dress in preppy or traditional styles. She is usually more conservative in her social behavior out of a true reverence for her late husband. She considers it a responsibility to uphold his name and memory. This RM mostly networks among her Rich friends and relatives for

men to date.

Begin asking friends if they know wealthy widows or if they know someone who knows someone who knows a wealthy widow to whom they can introduce you. You may have to live in her husband's shadow, but it may be worth it.

What They Have In Common

As different as they are, the Rich Divorcee and the Rich Widow have certain things in common.

Both spent their married years developing the social life for their families. Among the ways they did this

was through charity work, art societies, and other similar avenue.

Initially, they may have built their identities in these organizations partly to please their husbands and to further their husbands' careers in a social contest.

However, as their husbands' careers reached a point of success that no longer required business leverage of social contacts, their husbands' lost interest and increasingly declined attending events they now considered boring, leaving their wives to attend them alone.

Their husbands' loss of interest came as a blow of rejection to the women. More than ever, they continued to cling to this one area of unrecognized

success that had been a key to their husbands' career, which now shines with success.

The identities of these women are built in these organizations, which are mostly filled with other women like themselves. That is all the sadder, since the women are now single.

Your Key With This RM

The Rich Divorcee or the Rich Widow longs to have a man share her interests, to appreciate what she has contributed, to recognize her social achievements. She wants to "show off" for him in a harmless way, and, most of

all, to have him SPEND TIME with her in her interests.

She will not mind buying the tickets to these events and gradually undertaking more expense for a man who seems to be sincerely interested in her and in her art and charity social world.

You will encourage her to pursue special events from her past interests and you will be willing and ready to escort her on a moment's notice.

From these social events you get a first hand look at how she is treated by others and her wealthy friends.

3. Rich Heiress

Rich Heiresses fall into two categories.

Wealth-Conscious: This is the woman whose inherited wealth and position is her only identity. Furthermore, she only associates with peers. Unless you have a blueblood history or are already in her social and financial circle, you had better...forget her.

Crusader/Rebel: These RM'S date, befriend, even marry people not of their social station. They have a heart and make good wives, period. Try not to take crass advantage of them. They are good women!

Your Key With This RM

Portray the sincere, quality man she believes you to be. Play up the fact that you are one of the undeserving downtrodden, who only needs someone to defend him, believe in him, support him.

Use the words "ethics," "honor," "integrity," and "honesty" a lot.

4. Rich Women Executive/Entrepreneurs

A Rich Woman

Executive/Entrepreneur is very, very, very, very busy. This woman is NOT just "posing" as a career woman, she is serious about making money and achieving goals. She will not mind helping you do the same. She considers having the best in life to include having a good husband. If you can fit in to her plans, you stand a good chance.

There are **three types of Rich Women Executive Entrepreneurs.**

1. The first type will want YOU to have a career of your own and to be successful on your own, too.

2. The second type will find a House-Husband okay with her. She won't be picky about your background, either. She simply wants love and a stable home foundation for her demanding life.

3. The third type will be looking for a part-time or full-time business partner, who will work alongside her to create a joint business success as well as marriage success. She will assess you on your business sense and whether or not you complement each other and pick up the slack where the other has weaknesses.

Your Key With This RM

In any of the three cases, you must be extremely INTERESTED IN and NURTURING OF her goals so that you become a necessary part of her overall success and happiness.

All three types are looking for a husband who is an emotional support-system. They find the demands of the business world challenging enough and do not want a husband who is a problem or who tries to compete. You will find her equally as supportive of you.

Rich Men

Can you tell if a man has money by the shoes he wears or the watch he has? A lot of women use this standard (as well as the car he drives).

Realize that a Faking RM can buy these items at resale shops, even so-called estate sales that are really upscale neighborhood garage sales. In some cases they can borrow or lease items.

Hone your awareness of Rich Men so well that you can tell the difference by the way they interact with other men.

Women can learn to distinguish

the differences of behavior exhibited by those two basic categories of Rich Men:

Women who are seeking a male RM for romance have two basic choices:

The Self-Made RM

Rich Heirs—Wastrel or Wealth Building Heirs.

The Self-Made RM

The self-made RM may or may not have rough edges. Usually he has worked hard on self-improvement as his business dealings brought him into contact with polished businessmen.

He memorized and practiced etiquette from books and relied on an ex-wife to teach him why to appreciate ballet, which he does not attend anymore but buys unused corporate tickets for each year. He has extensive and expensive memberships in everything that requires success to join.

He has clear-cut ideas and opinions. His presence dominates a room even if he is standing still because his high-risk nature and aggressiveness are difficult to hide.

He is forthright, dresses conservatively, and is more animated than Rich Heirs. He is dynamic, intense, — this is an exciting man!

This RM is VERY marriageable.

His life is built around succeeding financially and he does not want any distraction from it. He wants a wife to provide a day to day continuity that allows him to concentrate fully on his accomplishments.

He probably will do less cheating than any other type of man. He does not have the time, the patience, or the interest in it. He especially does not want the distractions of it.

Much later that may or may not happen if the marriage goes awry; but marriage will always be important to this man. Should divorce or death interrupt that basic security of marriage, he will quickly replace that position with another wife—sooner than most

other men.

Your Key With This RM

The self-made RM wants to be proud of his wife. He wants her to take care of herself, to be as beautiful as possible, to be ambitious and to spend money to look good so he looks good. He expects her to be the social extension of him and to provide a respectable, interesting home life.

The Rich Heir

A Rich heir can best be identified by his body language, rather than his clothing. True, he may have an Ivy League Prep style in much of his clothing, even as he ages; but it will always, always be his body language that gives him away as a Rich heir.

Rich heirs limit their gestures from their elbows down, not with the whole arm. Their facial expressions are contained, as well to a half-smile, or a nod.

A British television group followed me around in Las Vegas for two days, having me point out men I thought were Rich. To their surprise, I was exactly right, especially when I pointed out a young man in his late

twenties in shorts and sandals as being a Rich heir. I identified him by his body language. He had a serene, contained body language as he moved from table to table, studied his options and placed his bets.

There are two categories of Rich Heirs.

1. Rich Heir Wastrel

The Wastrel may have dabbled at a few financial interests, but, basically, he is bored. He does not have to work and he does not.

He exists to be entertained. He relishes the role of patron, which gives

him some sense of importance. He may enjoy the spotlight of the press. He is something of a snob and very temperamental.

By and large, this gentleman's love of leisure and pleasure lead him to non-achievement. He wanders from one activity to another to avoid being bored. He is usually soft-looking. He does not exercise and frequently overindulges in fine food and wines. He is usually politically liberal, highly opinionated; but, sadly, without purpose.

His clothing choices are usually a bit arty—maybe even with a flashy, colorful scarf.

His entire identity is built on his self-importance due to his money.

Your Key With This RM

If he wants a wife at all, he wants her to be a combination "yes" person, maid, and mama, picking up after him and indulging him.

You may be able to save him from himself. You may not want to. But if you do, you will certainly earn every penny of it and deserve a place in heaven next to other Saints.

2. Rich Heir Wealth Builder

The Wealth Building heir inherited money and used the money to increase or actually build a fortune of his own.

This RM is conscious of his responsibilities to family name, to his community, and to society at large. He is not as animated as the self-made RM. He limits most of his expressiveness to smiles, raised eyebrows, and nods. His body usually remains passive, contained, controlled.

He is well-educated and well-connected.

His marriage-ability can go either

way. He may be open to women of all types because he has been exposed to a lot of people and ideas and has an open mind; or he may only want a wife like his mother or sister.

Your Key With This RM

You really have to determine if this is an RM who will marry out of his class. If so, he falls into one of three categories.

Whichever category he falls into will have its distinctive key to marriage of that category:

(1) Outcast Within His Own Social Class.

Outcast RM may carry the most prestigious last name in the community, state, or nation. His manners, clothing, education may be impeccably in line with the social set that his family name and money has enjoyed.

And yet, for some unknown reason, this RM Jr. is just not accepted in the social group his money is equal to and the rest of his family enjoys. He finds himself near the bottom of their social pecking order.

To the unknowing world and to the rest of the community, RM Jr. is

Somebody; but in his own social caliber, he is simply tolerated, but not included.

Naturally, it hurts, deeply, and he seeks solace elsewhere. He encounters a woman who is of a lower social class, but who, perhaps, is better looking than most of women in his family's social group.

What's more, this lower social class woman looks up to him, appreciates him, thinks he is "Somebody", whether he really is or not. His name is enough. He does not have to prove anything else to her. RM Jr. knows he will never really fit in or live up to his parents' name and expectations; so he flagrantly violates their marriage codes.

In a hurt attempt to thumb nose at

them, pretending not to care, he punishes them with a marriage to a woman they consider beneath them. He insults them by bestowing their prestigious last name on a woman who is an embarrassment to them.

Sub-Key

Unacceptable: He deliberately chooses someone who is an affront to their taste. Often his marriage choice may be porno-stars, strippers, nude models, cocktail hostesses, drifter poets, rock singers, drug users.

Usually, if a woman who married an RM complains that her husband's family has not accepted her, it is because

her husband never was in the first place. If he had been respected and accepted by his peers, she would have been.

(2) Guilt-Ridden Idealist

Guilty RM Jr. feels, for some reason, that he does not deserve all the wealth and luxury of his world. He never had to earn it, never experienced hardship. He looks at people around him who struggle or suffer and feels guilty.

He sees poor men who have made it on their own and admires them. Again, guilt. He buys his way out of difficulties. More guilt.

His one salvation, in his own mind, to justify his money is to make it up to the world and to apologize for his wealth, by marrying out of his class. He chooses a mate compassionately, based on the potential she could have with the backing and support of his millions.

Sub-Key

Elevatable: She will probably be someone working toward a higher educational degree, or a hard-working single mother who is trying to make something of her life and of her child's life. She may be trying to get a new business off the ground, or developing a career in the arts.

He chooses someone his family will approve of as far as values are concerned. This person will not be an affront to his family and will likely fit in, given enough time and polishing.

(3) Bored Novelty-seeker

Novelty RM Jr. is bored with the women of his social circle. He is part of the exciting business world his family handed him or that he developed out of their money. His business provides mental excitement. He expects his social life to provide an equal emotional excitement.

Novelty RM Jr. cannot help but notice that the most exciting thing going on in the lives of women of his social group is the upcoming book club or opera ball, which is boring to him.

He has experienced such activities with his family all his life. He wants a woman who is a breath of fresh air into his stuffy life. He wants glamour, intelligence, ambition.

Sub-Key Glamour: He will probably find a woman who is in a glamour field, such as a model or an actress. She may be struggling for financial survival, which builds admiration into the excitement she offers, because she is different from what he's used to. Because the need for

novelty is part of his make-up, and because his threshold for boredom is low, Novelty RM Jr. will probably cheat more than any other RM. Variety is the spice of life to this gentleman and he can afford as much variety as he pleases.

Which RM Is Best

All these RM's may socialize with each other at certain events that draw them together; but they tend to have their own, more tightly knit groups of people who are more like themselves.

So, which type of RM is best? You will enlarge your life by opening yourself up to experience all of them to some degree. One of the Richest

attitudes you can have is a tolerant, nonjudgmental appreciation for people, period.

You do not have to think the way someone else thinks. You do not have to behave the way someone else behaves. Inner Richness includes an unsuspecting willingness to LET people be different from you.

Sugar Daddies
Sugar Mamas

*“Money expresses an RM’s
feelings more than sex does.”*

—Ginie Sayles

**Listen, Sugar—The way to a Girl's
Heart is through Your
Credit Card!**



Copyright © 1990, 2014 Ginie Sayles
ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

When does taking money from your RM make him/her your Sugar Daddy or Sugar Mama? Is it once sex and money both start flowing?

Well, remember, you do not have to have sex with an RM in order to receive expensive gifts or financial assistance. You really do not. There were some RMs I never went to bed with and I still received money and gifts.

However, if you really like an RM you probably will go to bed with the RM because you want to.

But, bed or no bed, money expresses a Rich woman's or Rich man's feelings more than sex does; and, sex or no sex, I use the term Sugar Daddy and Sugar Mama to make a few

points about a relationship once money becomes involved.

Sugar Daddies—Sugar Mamas

Sugar Daddies and Sugar Mamas are RMs who are likely marriageable. They use money as an expression of their emotional egos to deepen the relationship. Money becomes their nurturing tool.

Sugar Daddies and Mamas will commit money as a development toward commit to marriage in the following ways.

—You will receive a gradual and

increasing level of money from your RM.

—The time you and your RM spend together will increase

—Your RM will put her/his dollar—and name—into joint ventures with you if you are at all business minded and will try to direct you to good advice (which the RM automatically pays for).

—Your RM will provide you with credit cards and let you use the RM's name.

—Your RM will include you in all aspects of the RM's social life.

—Your RM will not object to living together. Talk of marriage will not be taken lightly, if it is approached after

a maturing of the relationship.

Remember this: The person who gives the most, cares the most. Money-giving tends to increase as an RM gets more serious about marrying you.

Do not worry, if you take money from an RM, it has absolutely nothing to do with the RM's decision not to marry you—and do not let anyone make you think it does.

If that is what an RM says, then the RM is looking for an excuse and is lying. And it is at this point that you must not neglect certain warning signs that differentiate between the Sugar Daddies and Mamas with Marriage Potential and The Saccharin Daddies and Mamas with

None!

*Saccharine
Mamas/Daddies*

*“RMs who use money as a
‘substitute’ for themselves in a
relationship, are as
Saccharine as a sugar
substitute
in your coffee.” —Ginie*

Sayles

Saccharin Mamas and Daddies are not marriageable, no matter how they may try to make you think they are (which is why you need to know how to identify the difference for yourself).

For Saccharin Daddies and Saccharin Mamas, money is a substitute for themselves in a relationship, rather than an expression of themselves. How can you know the difference between an RM's commitment of money as "self" in a relationship; and an RM's commitment

of money that substitutes for "self" in a relationship?

Saccharin Daddies and Mamas will use money in the following ways:

—The amount of money outlaid into you will plateau early in the relationship.

—Gifts and money will sometimes be sent with a note that the RM cannot make it to some event that was scheduled with you.

—Your Saccharine RM will resist giving more money than the early plateau level.

—Your Saccharine RM may give money to your enterprises but will not jointly tie his/her name to it.

—Your Saccharine RM may put money into your enterprises as an investment only. You think he/she is being generous, but actually you end up paying back the money through profits, which makes it a good investment for the RM. Now, if that is all you want, this is terrific. If a Saccharine Mama or Daddy bankrolls your business and that may be all you need.

—Your RM will resist the idea of living together, although may agree to travel with you. If marriage is brought up at all, it is likely by you. The Saccharine Mama or Daddy may respond with reasons it is not possible ‘now.’ Marriage may be

implied as a ‘future’ possibility, but never nailed down with real dates. If dates are discussed, they will be sometime in the future and as the date approaches, it will be postponed by the RM with a quasi-reasonable sounding excuse.

—Your RM will resist letting you use his/her credit cards or his/her name.

—Your RM may include you in certain activities but not all of his/her social life. Usually there will be a certain group of friends you associate with; however, there are other friends the RM socializes with, without you.

Set Goals To An RM's Daddy/Mama-Style

Saccharin Daddies and Mamas are users. Fine. You can out-use a user any day. Get as much in tangible assets (gifts and cash) as you possibly can and safely stash it away. Some people find a safety deposit box in a bank works best for them; but be sure you keep up with your rental payments on the safety deposit boxes.

Meet as many as possible of the Saccharine RM's friends who have money. These RMs may eventually replace your current Saccharine RM. Try to assess if the new RM is a better bet for your goals.

Saccharin Daddies and Mamas have their uses. Keep it that way and you won't get hurt. Just do not start thinking that you can change a Saccharine Mama or Daddy. You can't.

And do not start thinking there is something lacking in you that makes the RM this way. There isn't. You are wonderful.

Yes, I know you want a relationship to culminate in marriage. That is your goal. But you may have to work your way through a few losses before you hit your home-run.

Use the Saccharin RM, while looking for a real sweetie!

The “G” Word

“Gold Diggers are the perfect mates for Gold Owners. They speak the same language.” —

Ginie Sayles

"I may commit many follies in life, but I will never marry for love." Those were the words of a Premier Minister of England, Benjamin Disraeli.

Disraeli kept his word. Brought up with money and successful, himself, as a writer, he nevertheless was rumored to have had bad loans.

So, he married a woman almost fifteen years older than he and for her money and position.

It was—surprise, surprise!—one of the happiest marriages in history. So, you are in good company with high achievers. The Prime Minister of England was a self-proclaimed gold digger!

People do not like to admit that

Gold Diggers often have a happy marriage and create interesting history—but history is on your side.

The Reason People Use The Word ‘Gold Digger’

The G word has been part of my jargon in my Marry Rich Seminars, since it's inception. There is no escaping the Gold Digger label—or the G word—with this subject, so let's address it here.

The G word is no different from the N word or any other word that people use to belittle anyone who does not agree with their biases about life, love, and marriage.

But will those same people who

criticize you pay your bills or child support? No. Then they will criticize you for being poor with new labels, such as lazy or stupid.

Words and labels are used to ‘control’ you, to limit you. Free your mind from those who will not value you more for living your life the way they tell you to.

So, how do you handle it? Oh my friends, take it as a compliment. I literally preen inside when I hear the word because I am proud of it.

When my husband and I were guests on a popular CNN talk show, I was asked about being a gold digger. I gave an alternate spelling of it as ‘Goal Digger’ and I have this interview on

tape. Other people are now using it, as well, and probably without knowing I used it that way, too. It is a natural transliteration or homonymic spelling.

Money Has Relationship Power

RMs who say they avoid gold diggers just have not found one they want badly enough. The idea that "you get what you pay for" operates in them, subconsciously. They may date gold diggers and just not attribute the name to them.

People use their money to get the relationships they want. On an

International television show, my husband surprised me by confessing that he had consciously used money to entice me into a relationship with him. RMs are no dummies. They know what they want and do not mind the cost if they want it enough.

Money Is A Muscle

There is a Money Macho among men. Having money to satisfy survival needs has replaced having muscle to slay the animal beast of caveman days. Money slays the financial beast.

A wealthy man may be slight of build, but have tremendous financial muscle. For a woman to align herself

with a wealthy man was a form of protection.

Women have sought money for independence and equality. Increasingly, though, money is losing gender, while maintaining its muscularity and power.

Another G Word—My Defense Of The Gigolo

Gigolo is defined in the dictionary as a young man paid or financially supported by an older woman to be her escort or lover.

Well, as I see it, two people get

their needs met and are often happy. What is wrong with that? We pay for food, for gasoline, for a place to live, for cars and we are paid for our services on our jobs. All of this contributes to our happiness. If companionship is mutually beneficial, then it works.

And remember this: The person who pays for a relationship shares the same judgment as the person who is being paid. The role of a Gigolo would not exist if the RM did not want to pay.

In Palm Beach Florida, wealthy women refer to gigolos as “Lifeguards.” The term is meant to describe a young man who has a beautiful body and provides great sex. He is not artistic, intellectual, political per se, or a

businessman. He is strictly eye candy who can perform in bed.

He is probably not a lifeguard, although he may be; but he may have other low paying jobs that make him accessible to a wealthy woman, such as working as a body guard, chauffeur, lawn man, mechanic for specialized expensive cars, bartender for a catering party affair. The list goes on and on as long as he has a job that exposes him to Rich women.

Some of these introductory positions may evolve into marriage, if the wealthy woman is not already married and wanting to stay with her husband.

The real key with a Gigolo is to

dress like the Prince I describe when he is with a wealthy woman—dressy and casual elegance—so that she sees you are ‘elevatable.’

Humor

It helps to have a sense of humor about your very serious pursuit of an RM. Some light-hearted Gold Digger quips keep you from having a brittle attitude that does not attract anybody, much less an RM.

In the stock market, there is the advice to "Buy low, sell high" for making money. You can say, "Marry low, divorce high!"

Any goal you pursue with a sense of humor as well as a strong sense of purpose, is, somehow, easier to achieve.

Some people consider any woman a gold digger if she asks for something and then a relationship does not work out. How silly.

When I was a guest on CNBC, the show also had a guest with money to give the point of view of feeling taken advantage of by gold diggers.

He complained that he had bought refrigerators and washing machines for women he dated and yet the relationship did not work out and he felt used.

I could not help but laugh, knowing that most Rich men give diamonds and cars along with other

perks and if the relationship does not work out, they joke about it over martinis with other Rich men who simply consider it part of the landscape of Rich relationships.

This man was whining about gold diggers ripping him off for refrigerators and washing machines. When he asked my reaction, I could only say, “We simply must upgrade your caliber of gold digger.”

My thoughts were that he had not met a ‘real operator’ who knows how to get cars and jewelry, clothes, rent payments or underwriting a business; and that he should consider mere refrigerators and washing machines as charitable write-offs!”

*Is Your RM For
Real?*

*“Identify RMs by their body
language, not their clothes”*

—Ginie Sayles

If you carry on a long distance relationship or if you are not around a person very often, you are subject to being fooled by a professing RM.

The following guidelines are not infallible; but they are better than nothing. They can help you check out a person you have met or track down someone you want to meet.

Will The RM Deliver?

This, to me, is ultimately the best way to check out a person—Will the RM deliver? You have compassion for a person who may not have money; but if the person is leading you on, you test their ability to perform by:

1. Making expensive suggestions for activities together.
2. Upgrading the RM's suggestions.

Making Expensive Suggestions

Name the very most expensive restaurant in town. When your RM takes you there, order the most expensive items in every category of the menu. This can include two items, even.

If the RM winces or goes to the restroom or complains of being on a diet

or suggests you order something else, you have your answer.

Upgrading Your RM's Suggestions

Let's say an RM suggests having a picnic together. You light up and say, "I would love it. I can have the Epicure Elite Caterers pack an elegant, gourmet picnic for two that you can pick up on your way to get me. We can have a romantic picnic for two on the beach."

If an RM suggests something and you then upgrade it, you will find out very quickly if real money is available or not. And, frankly, if the person is Rich

but you are not going to benefit, then, why bother?

The only other recourse with someone who may have money but not share it is if you know the RM has other Rich and generous friends. In that case, use the hell out of the stingy RM to get you around the RM's generous Rich friends who have potential and make the time count to cultivate one of them for dating toward marriage (or whatever your goals are).

Neighborhood

This may or may not be a reliable method of determining whether a person

has real money.

The individual may be house-sitting, or using someone's corporate-owned house, ranch, apartment, or condominium; but you can check the Deed Records at your County Court House to verify who owns the house if the person claims to own it.

On the other hand, if the person rents an apartment, how expensive are the apartments? How exclusive? Again, this may be an apartment rented by a corporation for guests or out-of-town officers to use when visiting, so do not come to any conclusions until you have checked further.

Online Library. You can check the

online City Directory of your Internet Library or visit your brick and mortar Library. City Directories give a cross-reference of people in three categories:

Address—you can look up an address and see who lives there

Name—You can look up the name of a person and find out where the person lives.

Telephone number—You can look up a telephone number and find out whose it is.

Marital Status is often indicated by giving the name of the spouse as resident, occupation, and sometimes the telephone number. Also, if you want to know if someone is or has been married; google a person's

name as “Mr. and Mrs. name of RM” and see what comes up.

Another indication of wealth is evidenced by Clubs they belong to. Normally, if a professing RM takes you to a club that you know is very exclusive; and if people in the club know the RM, consider it a positive indication. However, look for other indicators to confirm it.

If you want information about your RM’s business, look for the following publications online:

—Dun & Bradstreet Million Dollar Directory® of America’s Leading Public & Private Companies

—Standard & Poor Register of Corporations

—Macmillan Directory of leading Private Companies

—Industry Surveys

—Encyclopedia Of Associations. If you cannot find information about someone in the profession the person claims, look up the professional association and see if the person is listed

Google news archives or use Library Newspaper Microfiche. Major newspapers keep their back copies. You can check their index to see if a person in your area has had anything written about him/her. This is true for Magazine article archives

Directory Minuses:

—Not everybody who is active in an industry will be listed in a directory; so it is still possible your RM is for real and for some reason is not listed.

—Some listings are voluntary

—Some legitimate RMs will forego being listed because they know that many sales people use the directories as a solicitation tool and they do not want to be bothered.

—Not every online library carries Industry Surveys

Rich Sex®
- **The Sexual
Dynamics Of
Money™** -

“A man with a great deal of money—It’s almost as if he has an extra genital.” —Ginie Sayles

A Dallas Morning News article quoted me when I said, “A man with a great deal of money—it’s almost as if he has an extra genital.” This quote was also in the first edition of my book.

Recently, I received an email from a journalist for a major New York newspaper who was working on a story about how younger wives of older Rich men stay “sexually in the mood” despite the age difference maybe physical attractiveness difference – and the journalist wanted my comment.

So I wrote back, “Don’t worry about her staying attracted to him because **it is almost as if a Rich man has an extra genital – i.e. money is his extra genital.** A younger woman does not even see his age or physicality because she luxuriates in **his financial power and that is a super-huge turn-on, sexually.** Not difficult for her to stay in the mood at all!

To paraphrase what I said on *The Joan Rivers Show*, **if an RM has problems (that Viagra cannot fix), a good credit card can make up the difference!”**

Once you get to the stage of safely making love with your RM, you will

begin to realize the Sexual Dynamics of Money.™

Money is very sexy. It is a sexual energy, a sexual asset that ignites desire and passion in the exact, same way as a centerfold body.

Somehow, a fat bank account equates a desirable body. A Rich woman does not even need cleavage. And a man with a great deal of money—it is almost as if he has an extra genital.

The Extra Genital

Sex is the act of giving pleasure to each other. An RM has so many more ways to give pleasure in addition to sex that it is like experiencing an extra

genital of pleasure.

And when sex does occur with a really Rich Mate, the surroundings are lush enough to stimulate your sensuality. The perfection of details in sumptuous comfort enhances the lovemaking experience.

Money is the extra genital.

How Soon Should You Go To Bed With An RM?

Sex is a very, very important element for marrying an RM. Your six guidelines for deciding when the time is right are:

You can have sex when you are convinced the RM is sexually safe—i.e.

disease-free—and will practice safer sex with condoms. You cannot be coy about this.

After safety issues, your next big issue is do you want to have sex this RM? Because money is a turn-on, it is easy to find yourself turned-on fairly quickly to an RM.

You can have sex with your RM when it is clear your RM wants sex with you, not just sex, period, without any interest in you.

You will know the difference because an RM who wants sex with you will take the time and trouble to wine, dine, and be attentive to you. The RM will be interested in your pleasure and interests. Too, she or he will make a full

evening of the event, not indicate a pressure of having to be somewhere else later.

Especially telling is that an RM who is interested in you will be willing to let you postpone making love until later, if you wish to delay for some reason.

An RM who just wants sex, will not be very gracious about waiting, may, in fact, indicate the RM has somewhere else to go later and has a time limit for being with you.

You can have sex when you are willing to accept the fact that this may or may not lead to a relationship; and that even if you never see each other again, you still want to experience this person

in bed and will be glad you did.

You can have sex if you or your RM have no hang-ups about premarital sex (more on that when I discuss exploitation in Number 5 below under the Sex Is Wonderful heading). Hang-ups limit your self-confidence and your effectiveness.

You may think you do not have any sexual hang-ups; but, frankly, if you are scared that someone may not like you anymore if you go to bed with that person, you have a hang-up!

Furthermore, that is almost exactly what will happen! Somehow, your fears can trigger self-conscious behavior cues that set in motion an automatic response of rejection in the

other person. Your perspective about sex is more important than the actual sex in the long run.

You can have sex with an RM if the RM has already shown a financially generous and sharing disposition toward you.

Just as soon as these six issues are cleared, what are you waiting for—except to build a little extra tantalizing suspense by stalling the RM an extra ten minutes...and then an extra five...then just one more little minu...

What RMs Want In Bed

RMs want to believe sex together

is something special. That is what you want, too. A couple of ways you can make sex special is through...

Offbeat Times For Sex. You never have to do a kinky thing in your life (unless you want to) as long as your timing is unique.

One low-key example is that when the butler announces dinner will be served within a number of minutes, whisper to your RM that you want to make love....now...and to instruct the butler to leave fruit and cheese in the library...for later.

You Are Comfortable Initiating Sex—Do not do this all the time; however, you have desire for sex, too, and may occasionally delight your RM

when you turn the tables as to who initiates it.

Too, RMs want to believe THEY are something special in bed. Do not gush over how great they are; but...

Give Special Responses. All through this section, I am advising women not to fake orgasms so they can learn how to actually have them if they want to. However, I do know that some women have occasionally faked orgasms superbly and an RM thought he was such a super-stud, that it worked. Soooo, you will have to decide for yourself on some occasions

Still, I would rather you learn how to hit the high-C's for real—and you

can. I do give step-by-step methods for learning how in my book, *The Seduction Mystique*, and many women have told me it worked for them!

Be Innocent At Times. Ask the RM to teach you something minor about intimacy together that you do not feel confident about. Make it something small, such as how your RM likes love nips on the earlobe or how the RM likes to kiss (or to show the RM how you like to kiss) to other, more intimate but very, very mild sexual overtures Minor sexual shyness.

But, come up with your own seductive surprises, so you will be memorable. Vary your sexuality back

and forth from sophisticated to innocent.

Both are good for sensuous discovery in early stages. Make your responses to those occasions special. And get it together for real with the following thought patterns.

YOUR Sex Is Wonderful

Sex is you. You are a total, living, breathing sex organ, from head to foot. Be proud of it. You are a sexual organism. And your sexuality is as uniquely wonderful as your thumbprint.

A brief, refresher course in Sex 101—sex is core as existence itself, life itself. You are not only the result of sex,

sex is a result of you.

If you have negative beliefs or thoughts about it, realize you have chosen those beliefs somewhere along the way and the beautiful thing is, you can RECHOOSE your thoughts.

Sex is self-expression. It is healthful. It is relaxing and rejuvenating. Wonderful sex requires:

The Willingness To Be You In Bed

You must educate yourself to your own body and your own sexual pleasure. Listen to your body to know what is right for you. You are a considerate, cooperative partner, but you are not

trying to please anybody.

Know Why You are There

There is a lot of falderal about singles being exploited by premarital sex. Not true. If you feel exploited because you went to bed with someone, then examine your motives for having gone to bed with the person.

If you went to bed with an RM hoping to make a relationship out of it; or hoping the RM would come back; or hoping the RM would marry you—then you went to bed with the RM for the wrong reason.

You only feel exploited because

you went to bed with the RM in an effort to manipulate the RM and it did not work.

BUT, if you can look at an RM and say to yourself, "I know this person is sexually safe disease-wise; and even if I knew I would never see this person again in my life, I would still want to go to bed with her or him—that is the right reason to bed down! You want to.

When you are there for your own safe pleasure, you are there for the right reason.

In Bed

Surrender to sex itself; not to your RM. When you surrender to sex itself instead of to a person, that eliminates

self-consciousness. You can lose yourself into the feelings that engulf you.

Key Points

Sex is so important in getting an RM to the altar, that you want to know the elements that count the most:

—Do try to make it a wonderful, loving experience **for you** as well.

—A woman can build sexy, sexy anticipation by having lingerie that laces up in back and requires her RM to unlace it.

—A man can surprise a female RM by stepping out of a serious looking business suit with a gold lame G-string

—The best way to impress your RM with your sexuality is with sensual responses.

—Whatever the shape of your body, seem proud of it. Do not complain about faults. I mean it. Don't!

—Do not talk about lovemaking afterward with worry or regret. One of my clients bemoaned that her lovers never came back. In the questioning process, I found out that after making love, she always cried and said, "I am so afraid we're both going to hell for this sin." Instead, respond positively without gushing over it.

Cautionary Points

—Do not exclaim "Oh, that was fabulous, the best...oh god, I cannot believe it!" No, don't do that. Everybody else is quipping "That was great!" to the RM after sex. You want to be different.

The way to do that, is to be affectionate and just **talk about other things**. If you say anything at all about sex together, speak in terms of looking forward to developing together as lovers.

Say it slowly, as if in thought. That should build in a slight challenge of causing the RM to wonder if there was anything she or he did or did not do. But, do not dwell on it. **Never complain** about sex, though. And if pressed, say it

was lovely. If the RM carries on about sex with you, that is a real plus! Get on to other subjects.

—Do not be available all the time for sex. But when you are, be enthusiastic, sensual, and totally into it. Love it.

Initially, you and your RM will probably be in bed most of the time. This is good because it shows you both love it.

But, after a couple of weeks of clawing each other's clothes off to get into bed, create a "yes-yes-yes-no" pattern.

A Rich male client told me in a private consultation that he divorced his

wife because she wanted too much sex.

“You know, Ginie, I fell in love with her for the same reason. I had never experienced a woman who liked sex as much as she did. So we married a few months after our sex life began. I thought I was the luckiest man in the world.

“...but, after the first year, she never let up. Sure, I knew that couples have sex a number of times a day when they first fall in love. I was still in love with her, but I have been in long-term relationships before and I know that after the first year, sex gradually settles into a pattern that works for both people. When previous relationships ended, it was for reasons other than sex.

“To tell you the truth, I am pretty

much a once-a-week guy for regular sex and occasionally once in-between. But that was not enough for my wife. She expected our daily double to continue forever after we married.”

“When I have sex once a week, I look forward to it all week; and afterward, I think about it and relive it and savor the experience. It seems special. Like a reward.,” he shrugged, “But when I have it once or more everyday, it doesn’t seem special anymore. I don’t think about it later and savor the pleasure of it. It is no different from brushing my teeth and just about as interesting.”

“That is who you are and that is the way you like sex so it is right for

you,” I reassured him, honestly. “The most important aspect of a couple’s sex life is that they are equally matched in sex drive. You have finally realized your level of sex drive and that is the first step to finding a good match.”

He looked me in the eye. “I know the average man has sex three times a week; but that is not every day, either. Most men think they would have hit the mother load with a woman who is available every day; but I think if it exceeded their three-times-a-week pattern, they would eventually feel burdened by the demand. I began to dread it, so I divorced her for too much sex.”

One woman told me of a man she

almost fell in love with. "He was the greatest in bed. He was so free about sex and he liked to have it anytime, any place!" She paused, "That was really exciting at first...but, then...I don't know, it just didn't seem very special later on. I knew I could have it so easily that there was nothing interesting about it."

Maybe there is something wrong with her thinking. But if you want a relationship to work out with an RM, stay in control of your sex life.

Stay Special

During the time you are falling in love with each other, enjoy the desperately hot sex as frequently as you

wish. And if all you want is hot sex, you have a fantastic arrangement; but if you want marriage, remember that **even the best things in life can pall if they are too available**. They lose their specialness. **A tiny bit of frustration keeps interest**. Be loving; but find a reason to occasionally delay. Heighten the anticipation. Stay special.

Not A Swap Of Sex For Money

By the time you and your RM begin sharing a bed, you should also be sharing an increasing amount of the RM's money. Whereas you do not go to bed for money; you do not establish a

relationship without it.

You can set a clear standard that this is not a swap of sex for money by taking your RM past a shop, pointing something out that you want and exclaiming, "I just love that and I want you to buy it for me!"

Once the RM buys it, if there is the slightest expectation that you are expected to be available sexually because of the gift, you become indignant.

"Of course not!" You say with consternation, "You bought this for me because you like me!"

And you do not give the item back.

NOTE: Never, ever return a gift

for any reason. Sell it, but never return it.

Should You Have Sex With More Than One RM?

I don't know why not, as long as you are single and as long as you practice safe sex.

When you are not married, you owe your allegiance to yourself, not to some antiquated social rule. You control your own sexuality and your own body.

Your Attitude About Sex

Your attitude in bed counts a lot! Do not try to impress your RM with

fancy "techniques." It comes across that you are trying too hard and the only people who ever try too hard are people who are in a losing position.

Hormonal Attraction – Chemistry

There is nothing as magical as sex based on strong hormonal attraction. Nothing. You and a mate have bodies that 'fit,' desire-levels that 'fit,' and each time you have sex together it is a discovery of having found each other, at last!

You can hardly keep your hands off each other in the early stages of

discovery and even as time passes, sex together is satisfying, happy when there is a strong and mutual hormonal attraction.

Sometimes one of you thinks you both feel the hormonal attraction and it causes an 'uneven' relationship that eventually becomes problematic. Other times, life eventually 'wears out' the initial power of it and familiarity makes it stale for one of you. Whichever one of you it is, does not matter and no one should blame himself or herself when that happens.

But while it does last, enjoy it to the full. This is as good as it gets!

What Is Great Sex?

Great sex is compatibility and knowing your own sexual nature. As I said, above, I have already written about this and about how women can learn how to have an orgasm in my book, *The Seduction Mystique* so I won't repeat it all here for those who have already read it.

Nobody is great in bed with everybody! That is a fact. You are great with some people and crummy with others (although they may not say so) And you find some people great in bed and others crummy.

It is getting 4 things right that creates Great Sex. What are the 4 keys?

Great sex happens when two people have:

1. Matching sex drive
2. A snug fit
3. Good rhythm together
4. Compatible timing.

You can immediately see that if one of these is not workable for one of you, the sex may be great for one of you but not for the other—and that is no one's fault. That is just how it is.

And if one of the four listed above is off, sex may be okay, but not great. Or it may be good but not great.

My point is, we are all made differently and so there is no one who will 'fit' everybody, either in body parts or temperament.

No one is better in bed than you

**when you have the right sex partner
who**

- 1. Fits your sex drive**
- 2. Fits your body**
- 3. Fits your movements**
- 4. Fits your timing.**

**You are great in bed with that
person and vice versa.**

Kinky Sex

“Mild experimentation, and most sex toys are not kinky. True kinky sex is often a sign of a low sex drive.”

—Ginie Sayles

**Is sex with him the best
I've ever had?**



**You bet his billion dollar Assets,
it is!!!**

Playful, provocative sex is sometimes referred to as kinky, but it is not. It's cute, loving behavior that excites. Kinky sex in the extreme can be defined as perverse, abnormal, deviant, unnatural, degenerate, or depraved. It is not the same thing as mild experimentation or fun positions.

People with a healthy sex drive do not need much experimentation to turn them on and to enjoy sex. People with a healthy sex drive frequently do not need stimulation other than nearness to someone who attracts them—and just

kissing and touching with that person leads to strong desire and consummation.

Kinky sex is experimentation gone overboard because a person's sex drive is so low the person cannot be aroused by romantic nearness to a person. The person with a low sex drive needs extremes to be aroused.

Three Ways That Sex Turns Destructively Kinky

One: An RM who has a weak sex drive instigates it because the RM must resort to extremes of behavior in order to perform.

Two: Or there are some RMs who believe their money should bring them things that no one else can experience—and that their money makes them above convention. They may then cast aside convention for kinks, which actually makes them more conventional than ever.

Three: You. You may innocently get the ball rolling through the very sexually free quality that attracted an RM to you, initially.

The scenario goes like this:

You and your RM experience a delightful sexual freedom together, which is a wonderful, binding quality in your relationship. It does not rely on

much more than close proximity to each other.

One day, you innocently mention something a tiny bit different to add to your usual lovemaking that you and your RM have not done before.

Your RM is intrigued by the novelty of it and responds. At the same time, your RM thinks you may have a wider orientation range than previously believed. The sexual relationship takes on a delight of discovery.

Eventually the novelty wears off. Your RM suggests something a little newer, thinking that since you offered a little change before that you will like a new suggestion.

You are a little surprised by the

idea, but go along with tolerant affection to please your RM. Your sex life perks up with the fun of this new practice.

Your RM notices the new wears off a little faster this time and thinks up something really different. You are not thrilled about it; but you fake enthusiasm to please your RM, and your sex life continues amiably.

Your RM enjoyed the high from the new practice and now feels the plunge of disappointment as it, too, becomes ordinary.

Your RM suggests another idea. You consider the suggestion out of line with what is comfortable; but realize that your RM is turned on by it. You do not want to seem less sexy or intolerant to

your RM by disapproving, so you agree to it.

The sexual relationship becomes less enjoyable for you, but you think this practice will wear off and you and your RM will get back to normal.

Your RM, by now is addicted to sexual variety in the relationship with you, and can no longer maintain sexual interest without adding something newer and newer.

Dreading and almost fearing the plunge of disappointment when the high wears off, your RM attempts to stave off the inevitable lull before it can set in. Your RM begins searching sex material for new ideas.

Finding one, your RM announces

a new sex practice for you to try together.

You are hurt by the suggestion, but now you are more worried than hurt. You are afraid that your RM's waning interest in the newest sex style signals the RM's deeper waning interest in you. Fearing your RM will find someone else and wanting to hold on to the RM, you consent.

Your sexual relationship is only slightly better for awhile...and so the cycle goes, ad infinitum. It never ends. It never ends.

You will always think that "If I just do this one act, then that will satisfy my RM."

But it does not. It never will. Your

RM is now addicted to higher doses of unorthodox sex that have less and less to do with true caring, tenderness, and intimacy.

No Longer Asking For Sex

At that point, the RM is no longer asking for sex. The RM is asking for a "high." Sex, in and of itself, is no longer enough.

Paragraphs 1, 2, and 3 as described above, are healthy sexual expressions. But paragraph 4 describes the moment you must protect both your relationship and yourself.

You must say to your RM, "I will

give you sex when I also desire it; but I will not give you kicks instead of sex."

If pushed, you can add "It has been shown that a true gourmet does not need heavy seasoning on food. Only those with weak or dulled palates must add unnecessary ingredients in order to taste it. The same thing applies to sex. Those who really love it and really know it, do not need additives to enjoy it."

Your RM will probably never suggest anything off-the-wall to you again and in all likelihood will not leave you.

Each sexual relationship has its own pattern. The addiction exists within that relationship, but maybe not in

another.

Sexual Gourmets Set Sexual Limits

When a powerful RM who is used to being in control feels sexually out of control, an RM wants a mate to be the moral safety net.

It can be almost like a chronic malady that may rage with fever but comes under control again when in the safety of the doctor (mate), who is the moral authoritarian, like it or not.

The first time your RM suggests sexual behavior that is not loving and sexy, do not hedge. Say no and mean it. No discussion.

How can you determine which behaviors are provocative and which are potentially damaging to a relationship?

Sexual behavior that has any of the following characteristics may be considered risky:

- Produces excitement without tenderness or caring intimacy
- You enter into or emerge from with a feeling of sadness
- Duplicates cruelty
- Leaves you feeling humiliated and degraded
- Is based in anger
- Leaves you with a hurt ego

These statements are NOT to

judge anyone's sexual fun and games. I do not care what you like to do. I am telling you what can damage a relationship with an RM and what can promote it. That is all.

Marriage Sex For An RM

It is this difference that creates marriage-oriented sex and nonmarriage-oriented sex. Even in a marriage, an RM may ask her husband or may ask his wife to try something unusual, for example, a ménage a trios, although it could be something else. However, an RM will feel less loved if the spouse consents.

Initially, the RM's behavior is nothing more than a spoiled child wanting to know where the limits are in the sexual relationship. And that is the time to set them. If not, it is harder to go back and reinstate sexual respect than it is to establish and maintain it with loving discipline in the first place.

If the RM's request includes sex with other people and if the wife or husband even reluctantly consents, the spouse has, by participation, granted permission for the RM to have sex with other people. There will be no going back to the love life that was.

Understand this: Once a spouse begins performing for the RM in a manner that is no different from that of a

kept mistress or gigolo or no different from a prostitute, the RM wonders what is the point in being married?

By consenting, the spouse enters a greater losing position than if the spouse had said no. The spouse then begins a desperately "hanging on" behavior that will eventually lose.

Even if a married RM finds outside playmates, the RM is less likely to leave a spouse who resists performing sexual kinks than if the spouse consents.

I know a woman who deeply loved the RM she married. For years they were sexually exclusive with each

other. Then he became addicted to pornography and eventually wanted to act out pictures he saw and she obliged.

Eventually, he suggested a ménage a trios like those he saw in his porn collection.

His wife was upset by his suggestion and refused. He kept badgering her to fulfill this fantasy, and, worried that he would go outside their

marriage to fulfill it if she did not, she located a willing female participant and they acted out his fantasy.

She thought that would be the end of it; but acting out that fantasy was the beginning of the end of their marriage.

By participating with him, it was 'consent' for him to have other women in bed. Until that event, he had never transgressed. Within the year,

he filed for divorce and he even dragged in the ménage a trios as a character flaw in her and accused her of the idea, which it was not.

What an RM may ask for sexually and what the RM gets sexually from you as a spouse should be greatly different from sexual services the RM would be able to pay for.

If you are married to an RM who suggests kinky stuff, try not to act shocked or too upset. Dismiss it with a wave of your hand and a laugh as if it is ridiculous or wrinkle your nose and

choose from one of the following:

Answer: “I know everyone has fleeting images of things like that; but acting out a fantasy kills the magic of it as a fantasy. Besides, that sort of behavior is not for us. It is for people who have hormone problems.”

Answer: “No.”

Answer: “We don’t need that, Sweetie. Please do not mention it again.” (You can eliminate the word ‘please’ if you wish.)

Answer: “That sort of sex is for losers.”

The less you make of it, the better. When you say something similar to one of the above answers, make it seem ‘beneath you both’ and who you are as people.

What If You are The Kink

Believe me, if you like kinky sex, that is fine with me. At the same time, I like for them to be successful in their relationship goals as well as in their sexual goals.

A Kinky RM likes the safety net of a spouse with boundaries. So, if you are kinky and want to marry the Rich, I strongly suggest that even if you know

your RM kinks, that you do all your kinking behind the RM's back. When you are with your RM, just play it traditional (and 'think' kinky if you like). It is just safer for your relationship, that is all.

If you are kinky, you may prefer to settle for being playmate to the Rich and living a very independent life of luxury, rather than being a spouse.

But if you want your cake and eat it, too—it may be preferable in a love affair for your kinks than for your Rich marriage.

One other admonition: If you have ever participated in unusual sex, you do not owe anyone, not even a spouse, a confession. Keep your business to yourself and don't waste your time being

ashamed. You did what you did—so what! Your past is your business. Keep it that way!

Prenuptial Agreement Sex

It has been said that nothing corrupts like power and absolute power corrupts absolutely.

That includes the mate who is bound and gagged by a Prenuptial Agreement that spells out your sex life. The Prenuptial Agreement may say nothing about sex; however, if it spells out that you receive nothing or a pittance if you divorce your RM for any reason whatsoever, you enter the marriage in

sexual slavery and you both know it.

Very soon, you may find your limits tested by sexual cruelty.

The RM can—and usually does—do anything desired and requires you either to ignore, participate in, or to be humiliated by various sexual appetites.

Most people who are tied to this arrangement cannot raise hell with their RMs if they even look at another woman or man. Instead, they must bring that man or woman into their sex lives, either literally or in fantasy.

One infamous case in Texas had an RM who would invite his wife to his office ostensibly to take her to lunch

or shopping or to meet friends; and when she arrived, she found him in various sexual acts with women—which was exactly what he wanted her to do for his own cruel, sexual pleasure.

That is an example of destructively kinky sex. But she was tied to a prenuptial agreement that forced her to tolerate it or to leave, penniless.

*Love Dynamics Of
Money*

“Money is a language all its own—just as sex and love are—in this dynamic of sex, love, and money.”

—Ginie Sayles

Money is a language. For years I have been teaching that money is a language. Just recently, the scientific community has begun saying the same thing.

Money-Spending Is An Emotional Barometer

Money is a symbol of the emotional ego, period. People spend their money emotionally. Advertisers know this. They advertise, not on the basis of logic, but to appeal to emotions.

Watch where your RM spends his

or her money and you will know what is important to your RM. Since people spend their money emotionally, money-spending is a very accurate barometer of an RM's emotions—feelings—for you.

Even with everyday people this is true. If the average man tells his wife he loves her but he buys himself a new hunting rifle when she has not had a new dress in two years, I think we can see where his real interest is, where his real emotions are. So, you can tell what a person really cares about by where they spend their money.

The more money you invest in something, the more you have at stake in it, so the greater your sense of involvement with it, and the more

closely you guard it.

If you own just a few shares of Exxon stock and the stock market moves up or down 10 points, you may not watch it very closely.

If, however, you have several thousand shares of Exxon stock and the market moves a point or two either way, you are going to know about it, because you have put so much money into it, you will watch its every move.

You are more attentive to whatever costs you the most to have, including a person who demands the best of treatment from you over someone who will accept any circumstances you impose upon her/him.

Money-Spending Predicts Relationship Character

You can pretty well tell how a man treats people—including how he will treat you in a marriage relationship—by the way he handles his money.

One man had a pattern of wealthy, bankrupt, wealthy, bankrupt. He always used his wealth as a base of credit and then extended himself well beyond his ability to pay.

Let's translate his relationships into the language of money and see that it followed the same exact format.

He was a person who made

promises carelessly to women in his life. In the language of money, this equates to buying items on a credit card.

Trusting women often built their lives on his promises to them. In the language of money, this equates to giving him a line of credit.

But, he was never really there for them, when they needed him to come through on what he had promised in the relationships. In the language of money, this equates to not paying when the bills (promises) are due.

Bitter endings of the relationships ensued in which the lives of the women were damaged through scandal or severe financial difficulties. He, on the other hand, went about virtually unharmed. In

the language of money, this equates to filing bankruptcy—the creditor, who believed in him, ends up holding the bag.

This was a man who was emotionally bankrupt. It was a matter of character, mirrored in the way he spent his money.

I am not saying that a man or woman who files bankruptcy is a weak financial or relationship risk. There can be factors in the economy, rather than factors in the RM's character that are the cause.

Typically, though, if an RM is cautious with money, the RM is cautious with relationships.

If the RM is careless with money, the RM is careless with relationships. If

the RM is there for creditors, the RM will likely be there for you.

May I suggest strong scrutiny of how they spend their money as to how you will be treated in a marriage relationship?

Money Is A Social-Financial Identity

People use their money to say "who they are," according to what they can afford to do and to have.

Career women often have more relationship problems with men who are not Rich. The reason is that such men have not attained their own financial identities.

A man she is involved with may have ambition, and may truly love her and sincerely want to nurture her career goals. However, because he is also trying to succeed, he has all the same career problems she has so he is not able to help her very much with hers.

He suffers inner conflict when she begins succeeding—especially if his own career is not going as well.

He is proud of her. At the same time, he may compare his success with hers in his own mind and feel in second place (she does not feel that way...he does).

This can lead to resentments, compensations in affairs, sabotage of her efforts or of their relationship, guilt that

he wishes she would fail, enjoyment of any small defeat she experiences.

It is not diabolical or intentional. It is, frankly, a very natural, human response.

Unfortunately, it breeds competition—and competition strives for the defeat of the other person. SAD.

A Rich Man, on the other hand, has already attained his financial-social identity and he is not striving to establish who he is.

Because he is secure in his social-financial identity, he enjoys the success of the woman who is in a relationship with him. He often enjoys helping her succeed.

*Getting An RM's
Money
Into You*

“What costs the most means the most. The more money an RM spends on you, the more value you have in the RM's

eyes.”
—Ginie Sayles

The more money an RM puts into you, the more value you have in the RM's eyes and so the better your RM treats you.

To increase your chances of getting large sums of money and exquisite gifts from your RM, be sure you implant the image in your RM's mind that you are to have the best.

Have Your RM Always

Associate You With The Best

Let your RM know that you expect the finest. If your RM suggests an activity, you upgrade the setting for the activity that will be expensive.

Let's say that your RM telephones that he or she is taking you somewhere overnight; and would you like to make room reservations, then you do so in the most exclusive hotel with a lovely suite.

In this way, when your RM thinks of you, the RM will associate you with elegance and expensive quality. If you put your RM in a family motel near the airport in a nice room, your RM will associate you with that exact quality.

In your RMs mind, you become the quality you surround your relationship with. Make it a lush, first class quality.

Do Not Be Overly Easy To Please

If you want your RMs money, you must motivate your RM's emotions of a desire to please you. If you are overly easy-to-please, the RM will take you for granted.

That means you should not grouse; but you should definitely complain without ever sounding like a victim. Stomp your foot and insist the RM do something or if the RM is late or does

something else you do not like, leave and do not be available when the RM arrives.

An RM can be motivated to good behavior in order to avoid guilt if she or he does not live up that responsibility.

And, of course, an RM is motivated by the potential—not necessarily the actuality but the potential—of happier sex. Make RMs earn your approval.

Owners Not Loaners

A Rich woman may not be overly generous; but she wants you to look good, so she may loan the use of a fine wristwatch or expensive cuff links for an

event.

A Rich man may let his dates "wear" beautiful jewelry for a specific occasion and then strip them off as soon as they are back in the car.

One man had jewelry in his safe that each of his successive women wore. Can you imagine his friends chatting behind his date's back, "The emeralds looked better on Katy than on her."

Do not allow an RM to do this to you. If jewelry is offered for you to wear to an occasion, tell your RM that you only wear what you can keep with no strings attached.

It is really more of a disgrace to the RM than to the woman. It is a little humiliating to the woman and lowly of

him. A man of character would not cruelly tantalize an impoverished woman with jewels and then take them away.

Some RMs are now letting their dates "wear" beautiful jewelry for a specific occasion and then strip them off as soon as they are back in the car.

Do not ever allow an RM to do this to you. If jewelry is offered for you to wear to an occasion, tell your RM that you only wear what you can keep with no strings attached.

One man had jewelry in his safe that each of his successive women wore. Can you imagine his friends chatting behind his date's back, "The emeralds looked better on Katy than on her."

It is really more of a disgrace to the RM than to the woman. It is a little humiliating to the woman and lowly of him. A man of character would not cruelly tantalize an impoverished woman with jewels and then take them away.

You Have To Ask

How do you get an RM's money into you? You ask for it.

Incentive Buying. Start by suggesting your RM buy sexy lingerie. This is as true for a man courting a female RM as for a female who is dating a male RM. A man can ask his Rich

female to surprise him with bedroom clothes in silk for both of them. Lingerie is "bait" because there is something in it for the RM.

Small Delights. Shift your suggestions from lingerie into other small requests and gradually, over time, increase the costs and the frequency of asking. Ask for surprises. Your RM has set a date with you, and you say, "Bring me a surprise. I love surprises!"

Positive Suggestion. Try lighting up and saying, "I would love for you buy that for me." or "I thought you might like to buy thus and such for me."

Confident Tone. Do not ask for anything in a begging or whining or childish way.

No Question About It. State your request rather than asking it.

Creative Competition Between Your RM & an RM's friend. Mention that one of the RM's friends bought a Porsche for a lover. You want a Ferrari (or whatever it is that you want).

Anticipation. Speak confidently with a sense of excitement that the answer is going to be yes.

Witness Motivation. Make your

request in front of a salesperson or in front of an RM's peer (This is sooo bad, but often effective).

Not A Loan. Never "borrow" or act as if it is a loan. The benefit of an RM is to circumvent banks! You have no principal or interest to repay and no credit hassles!

Withhold Sex. Remember, even though this is not a swap of sex for money—and you do not have to go to bed with someone after receiving a gift—you most certainly never go to bed with a person if you are turned down! (Your feelings are hurt)

Reward The RM. Hugs, sweet kisses, praise, and even excitement are in order.

For serious living expense help, I used to have my RMs take me on a moonlight picnic. Then I would tell them my cost of living as opposed to my income, saying that I knew they wanted to know so they could help me. We would talk out arrangements and I would put it into action the next day.

Unfortunately for men, the double standard still applies, slightly.

Have an excuse why you cannot pay your way.

Your money is tied up, you helped a friend or you are helping your mother,

children, etcetera.

Be romantic beyond belief!

Memorize travel brochures, study travel videos of exotic trips.

Spin wonderful fantasies as you talk to her, using the travel brochure descriptions of places you would like to be with her, of moments you could share together..."IF ONLY...you could...!"

Once she begins drooling over these fantasies of you kissing her in the moonlight in an exotic setting, she'll find a way to pay for the trip and save your manly pride at the same time.

When she does suggest paying for it, be sure you react in the following manner. Frown and think about it for a second (Only a second.

Do not wait too long) without a word. Then take her in your arms and tell her how wonderful she is!

Never protest, "Oh, I just couldn't" or she may see your point, and, oh, you just may not!

Get her involved in your financial projects as soon as possible. Share your ideas for expansion. Get her excited with possibilities, be enthusiastic about her suggestions and get her name and her money into it!

Once a sexual relationship has begun—and sometimes before—you can let her know that you would love to take her to her favorite restaurant, but you are just not able to at the moment.

It is important that during this

time, you have also been accompanying her to places that are her major interest—say the ballet; and that you have been doing your homework and can share her interest—even if you are faking it. This will encourage her to be more generous with you.

If You Are Turned Down

If you are turned down, turn cool toward the RM. Be sweet but be ‘busy.’ Eventually, ask for something again. If you are turned down, again, throw a tantrum.

Shame the RM for the comparative difference between your

two lifestyles and how it must look to others who see each other and how they must consider the RM a low classed cheapskate (this should rankle).

Tell the RM your time is valuable and it is impossible for you to keep up standards for dating the RM on your small income as compared to your RMs. Mention that dating the RM is actually a hardship on you and the RM should be ashamed to take advantage of someone who has been such an asset to the RM.

Deliver this with all the angry, raw emotion your little heart can muster. Remember, you are fighting for your rights in the relationship and it can net you a lot of benefits and income—or it will end the whole relationship.

Do you want the relationship if it isn't paying off? If so, why????

Give the RM three opportunities to pay for something you ask for. Forget this RM if nothing is forthcoming that you request. And do not let an RM put you on hold with delays and postponements.

If Your RM Offers Money, Gifts, Or Financial Help

If an RM offers something to you financially, TAKE IT. Only turn it down if there are clearly strings attached.

Men: when she offers to pay your

way somewhere for the first time, this is what your behavior should be: Pause. Look away in deep thought. Frown. Then take her in your arms and tell her how wonderful she is!

If you say, "Oh, I just couldn't," she might see your point and you might not get the money.

Take the money and do not run. Stick around for more.

Never feel badly because you have taken money from an RM—whether or not you feel anything for the person. Realize:

One: The RM will spend it anyway.

Two: You were a terrific asset to

the RM during the time you spent with together.

Three: Someone else will get it if you do not.

Let me repeat—with feeling—someone else will get it if you do not!

Dating RMs And Your Dreams

To stay on track, review your dreams and then apply it to your dating relationships. Describe a behavior that will signify you have reached three levels of your dream in a relationship with an RM.

For instance:

Level One of your dream is reached when you receive gifts and/or money from an RM.

Level Two is reached when you buy an item that costs \$.... amount and the RM pays for it.

Level Three is reached when your RM assumes regular payments of some sort—i.e. rent, car payment, student loan.

Each level toward your dream is reached only when a defined, specific behavior is performed. Then you define three new dream levels in behavior.

*How To Love The
Rich
— And WIN!*

*“Money does not create
standards in an RM. You do!”
—Ginie Sayles*

Once you are dating your RM, you will control the relationship if you control yourself. Naturally, that is easier said than done.

Keep your manner cheerful, warm, and not trying to please. Then SET STANDARDS. Otherwise, you become a boring doormat and you will lose the RM.

The beginning of a relationship is the time to set standards. The standards will become self-perpetuating as time goes by. That is why it is important to get money into you early.

You will be setting standards, anyway, by the way you allow an RM to

treat you. It is just that they are high, medium, or low standards.

For example: no matter how crazy you are about your RM, you NEVER allow the RM to come over late at night. The reason for this is simple.

Your RM may "say" there is a business meeting or a business dinner or has to be out of town and then may telephone you around midnight or later, saying how much he or she has missed you and wants to see you.

Do not believe it. In all probability, your RM had a date with someone and it ended early or did not culminate in sex or the RM was bored or rebuffed.

Whatever the reason—and do not

get sucked into the triviality of caring about the reason—the fact is that the RM is actually **testing** you to see what you will allow him or her to get away with, how poorly he or she can treat you. Now the RM is not consciously testing you; but the RM is, in fact, testing you, subconsciously.

Sometimes, postponing a date with you can be a red flag that the RM is getting a little bit bored with the your predictability.

This is the time to set standards that can put you in first place by demanding first place treatment.

If Your RM Postpones

A Date With You

Never answer your phone or respond to a text message on a night your RM has canceled or postponed being with you. In case the RM comes by your place, have your lights out and do not answer the door.

If your RM reaches you the next day and asks where you were the night before, say you had a business meeting or business dinner and sound a little fishy—but never confess otherwise.

If Your RM Wants To See You Late At Night

If your RM calls you late one night when you have not been out with the RM that evening, it is best not to answer your phone and not respond to a text message. But if the call wakes you and you sleepily answer—and it is your RM saying he or she wants to come over, hang up (and chew your pillow to shreds if you have to in order not to call back or to give in).

This is really only a test of how you will allow the RM to treat you. Calling late to come over usually means the RM has been on a date with someone else and sex did not happen, so the RM wants you for consolation.

Let me repeat: the RM will act as if she or he had a late business meeting

or other demand. That is almost certainly a lie. But it really does not matter. The point is that the RM is testing you to see if you can be used in a second-rate way.

Whatever treatment you want, this is the time to set it into your expectations. It is virtually impossible to change it once the patterns are set.

Men, even if you are not the macho type, come up with at least one area of relating to this woman in which you can be "tough." Just one is all it takes to establish you as having backbone.

—Maybe you flatly refuse to get things for her.

—Maybe you openly refuse to stop

seeing other women until you are married. SOMETHing. Just something.

—Your manner should be that of a considerate escort, but not of a lackey.

—Save up enough money to take her anywhere she requests the first few times you take her out so that she can see you know how to handle yourself and to control the dining out experience together.

If you are a fairly young man, you may increase your chances if you go for older, Rich woman. Persistence is your keyword here AND a total disinterest in women your age or younger. No glimpses at shapely young twenty year

olds. No second looks at passing mini-skirts.

Be protective of her. Whatever she tells you, be on HER side. Make her feel safe and trusting.

As I said before, use the words "ethics," "honor," "honesty," and "integrity" a lot in conversations.

Do not Give In To Giving

Whoever gives more, loves more. Gauge your RM's affections for you by seeing if the RM gives to your demands. But, if you want your RM's love to grow, you will induce your RM to keep giving more than you. This is important for

marriage.

I am not talking about overwhelming your RM initially before love has a chance to grow. No. You start out on a high expectation, which you express by suggesting the best places for your RM to take you.

Then you increase your expectations gradually (but consistently), asking in little ways, so that your RM is having to meet your needs, your requests.

As your own feelings deepen, you will have to fight your desire to "do for" your RM, your desire to please your RM, your desire to give, give, give to whatever you think will make your RM happy.

This is not being ugly. This is necessary because everyone you are in competition with is giving, giving, giving and being taken, taken, taken and passed over.

You can show a giving nature by expressing your love for animals, children, senior citizens. Your RM will adore you for that type of heart. But to give to your RM is an open door for poor treatment.

For instance, a Rich man may even invite you as his date to his parties so you will clean up afterward. Yes, that is a cheapskate thing to do, but it is more common than you think.

A Rich woman may have you bartending parties all night long, when

she could have hired a bartender.

Money does not automatically create standards in an RM—YOU do!

Setting standards means not tolerating treatment that even slightly smacks of second class.

You are not the cook, the cleaning lady, the bartender, the laundry person, the call girl or the gigolo (unless you are one of these, which is fine as long as you are properly paid for your services). Make that clear if there is the slightest implication that your RM "expects" you to do anything.

If an RM asks you to do something as a favor, that is a dangerous open door to be used. Just wrinkle your nose and say, "Believe me you don't want me

doing that. It's not something I enjoy.”

Your RM will not like you or appreciate you one bit more for making life easier for him or her.

The RM will treat you the way you teach the RM to treat you. You will be respected for refusing to do work the RM can hire others to do.

I repeat, do not give what the RM can hire others to do. Give only what the RM cannot buy—a stimulating, warm, loving and challenging relationship, packaged to look good, demanding respect.

If you are a woman, make it clear you choose to not pay your way, if the subject comes up by him—and that you do not have to pay your way.

Other options are open to you.

Setting Precedents

Be careful what precedent you set. If you start off being willing to go to the RM's house for a date, you cannot expect that pattern to change.

If, on the other hand, you accept a date and then set a time you expect the RM to come to your house or apartment, you are setting a precedent that demands something of the RM in order to be with you. You are more special.

Availability

Do not let an RM know you have broken a date to be with him or her—

and yes, there will be times when you should break a date in order to be with your RM. A certain amount of availability is very important to sinking into a real relationship with an RM so that he or she begins to need you.

However, the first time you and an RM set a date, it should sound something like this:

RM: "Do you want to have dinner tomorrow night?"

You: "I would love it. Can we make it the day after tomorrow or Saturday?"

If the RM says: "I can only make it tomorrow night. Maybe some other time."

You say: "Well...let's set it for

8:30 instead of the usual 7:00, then."

You do these things to prevent an RM putting you in the category of being able to call at the last minute or if no one else is available.

Also, once in a while, be busy and unable to accept or keep a date. Not very often, though.

Give Gentle Orders

Don't ask your RM to do something. Give your RM small orders. "Get me a glass of water." "Bring me the TV Guide." If your RM gives you orders, balk. Do it with humor, but balk. Throw a pillow or give a teasing look and say, "Darling, get your adorable two

little legs up and get it yourself." (or however you want to say it).

If you are a woman, you can prepare dinner ONCE IN A BLUE, BLUE MOON, if you really, really, really love and adore gourmet cooking as a hobby; but beware the RM who gets used to having dinner at your place.

Anytime you cook for him, take him shopping with you and have him buy the groceries.

Your RM should have you out and about and in the public eye with him and glitzy five-star restaurants. These are the perks of dating an RM.

Too, you want to become recognized, if not "known" among the Rich social sets who go there. This is

one way of continually cultivating other RMs by being seen by them and gradually meeting them through your RM.

*Getting An RM
Hooked
On You*

*“Flaws aggravate...and
enchant! You have to balance
‘stability’ with being a
‘problem’ to your RM”*

—*Ginie Sayles*

What do RM's want in a mate?
MOST OF ALL, they want a mate who will add excitement or interest to their lives without embarrassment—although some will risk embarrassment over boredom.

You have seen people who try to be too perfect, flawless. Perfect is 'prim'—and prim is not sexy.

Flaws aggravate...and enchant!

Raw emotion is preferred to noble predictability for most RMs, as

long as the stability of the marriage is not threatened. Most RMs would rather a spouse smash the chandeliers than to remain passive and predictable.

The maxim, "Do ANYTHING, but don't bore me," is the secret of keeping any mate—but especially a Rich one!

The Importance Of Being A Problem

Just listen to people complain about their ex-spouses. Whatever they complain about is what kept them with the spouse so long. They stayed in the relationship, trying to figure out the solution.

They may not have been

particularly happy about it, but it held their interest. They were not bored.

If the problem got out of hand, of course, the stability of the marriage was impossible to maintain and the marriage ended.

You have to learn to balance being a bit of a problem to your RM with maintaining stability in the relationship.

You can do it. And you must do it. You must be something of a problem to your RM in order to keep him or her.

If you do not oblige your RM by being something of a problem to the RM, your RM will become a big problem to you. You can count on it.

BEING the problem keeps you in

control of the relationship. It keeps the RM happily on his/her toes, not bored, and keeps the relationship stimulating, interesting, satisfying, developing.

A certain amount of drama is important to a relationship.

What if you tuned into a popular television series and saw the lead character and the rest of the cast just sitting around the living room, feet up on the coffee table, eating peanuts and drinking beer?

And what if the whole time you watched it that night, that nothing else happened but that.

Would you tune in again next week to watch it? Of course not. It was boring. There was nothing going on.

You tune in to a television show to watch the characters solve a problem or dilemma – either seriously or humorously, depending on whether it is a situation-comedy ‘sit-com’ which is usually a dilemma—or a drama, which is typically a more serious problem. Action movies would not exist without a major problem to overcome.

Novels, movies, and television depend on creating "problems" to keep you hooked into tuning in or turning the page. That is what you can do to keep your RM tuned in to you, too.

For Women:

A running joke among Air Force Officers at Webb Air Force Base (now closed) in my home town of Big Spring,

Texas, was “when someone wants to get me a date with a girl and speaks glowingly that ‘all the other girls like her and she makes her own clothes,’ I know she will be a dud.”

I never met a man who wanted to marry a Girl Scout—sure, he may ‘say’ he does; but watch the types of women he shows interest in, not what he says.

The Importance Of Stability

Remember, I said "balance." If the relationship degenerates into a lot of fights and constant trouble, your position is reduced to gigolo or mistress level (which is fine, if that is what you want!).

The energy of the relationship

then becomes conflict. It may seem to fuel sexual drives; but those relationships are in trouble.

No matter how passionate the making up may be and no matter how much they declare their love for each other; one person is really only using the other one for entertainment.

It is a painful, doomed relationship. The respect needed for true love is lost.

"Do anything, but don't bore me," is the RM's silent desire. Be sure you heed it—with balance!

Read about the RM's the love life if it is online, study the ex-spouses. See if there is a type of man or woman this RM has a history of falling for.

One wealthy man dated a lot of models but his wives had all been brainy types. Surely enough, when he married again, his new wife was an intellectual.

Learn The RM's Hot Buttons

Never, never believe what an RM has said or is quoted as having said she or he likes in the opposite sex.

People may say what they have been programmed to think they should want and will rattle it off like a parrot; or they may say what they think is expected of them by the person asking the question. But their responses to the opposite sex tell the real truth of what

they really want. Responses cannot lie!

Believe only what an RM responds to. Once you have determined what you believe to be the RM's hot button, then alter your image accordingly.

How To Find An RM's Hot Button

Unresolved ego needs are the hot buttons. What are your RM's unresolved ego needs?

You begin by finding out what troubled the RM most about an ex-spouse or lover the RM cared deeply about. It must be a relationship that had

an unsatisfactory ending, that the RM is uncomfortable about or still gets a little emotional talking about.

If the RM has been married more than once; ask yourself if there is a pattern of a particular problem in the marriages?

The other person either ended the relationship or relationships or it ended because the RM gave up or was in a victim/losing position and got out.

The problems described in such relationships are unresolved feelings and ego needs. Use these. DO SOME of the same things yourself, only not as severely. Just a tiny bit. The RM will hate it and like it at the same time.

It is unfinished business. It is also

familiar business.

The Importance Of Familiarity

People respond to familiarity — even unhappy familiarity — like a bloodhound who suddenly finds the trail that carries the most familiar scent!

Let's say I wave a magic wand and—poof!—you are suddenly in a foreign country. You look around and you do not know where you are. No one speaks your language. You cannot read the signs on the buildings. You are lost.

This is often how people feel —*sometimes for years*—after a

relationship ends.

Back to our example of being lost in a foreign country. What do you do if you are lost? You look for something...familiar!

Let's say that you all of a sudden you see the double golden arches in the distance—MacDonalds! (I use MacDonalds because it is something everyone is familiar with).

Now, for the sake of allegory, let's say that you had never liked MacDonalds (hard to believe), but let's just say you never had liked it and never would go there.

Ah, but, NOW, your face lights up and you walk toward it as fast as you can...because it is familiar. You may not

like it, but at least you understand it. You know what to expect. You know what is expected of you.

Once you are in the comfort of being in something familiar, then you can begin exploring the unfamiliar grounds near and around MacDonalds.

You walk a few blocks, look around, and go back to MacDonalds. You do this in several directions, several times, always going back to MacDonalds, which is your point-of-reference.

You are familiarizing yourself with the new territory, learning your way around. This is the weaning away process of starting with what is familiar and then weaning away by getting used

to new familiarity.

After awhile, you will have learned your way around the new territory and will no longer have any need to go back to MacDonalds. But, the fact remains that it was your starting point.

An RM's hot button is the unresolved ego need.

It is the unfinished pain. It is the RM's emotional point-of-reference for relating. It is the RM's starting point for learning a new relationship. Whether either of you likes it or not, it is what the RM responds to.

Wean Away—Not Clone

If an RM carried a torch for an ex-spouse, the behavior worked for the ex-spouse, so work it for you.

Give this tiny taste of familiar pain only to keep the RM hooked until you can wean the RM away to your own style of love. Do not feel bad about it.

Use it **ONLY** long enough to wean your RM into your style of love. You do not want to make the pitiful, pitiful mistake of trying to clone the other person. To do so won't work. Not only that, but you want to be you and to be loved a new way—not just clone of previous person.

The relationship would only end up the same way—broken. Also, you will feel such a terribly weakened

personal identity.

Besides, it is not that the RM still cares about the other person; it is that the problem was never solved satisfactorily.

Therefore, you simply use some of the same methods as a tool of familiarity while you constantly introduce methods of love that are true to YOUR personality, and new to your RM.

In this way you gradually get your RM familiar with your style, thereby replacing the RM's familiar old love patterns with your new, increasingly familiar, and more satisfying love patterns.

Familiarity is the keyword here. You can build it into the RM, slowly replacing what your RM has been used

to—first, by actually doing some of what the RM has been used to—and second, by incorporating your own, better-working values, until the RM is weaned away to your style of love.

Using the "familiar problem" as a "starting point" for weaning is much the same way that you teach a three year old child something by starting with what the child understands. You start where the RM is—the hot button of unresolved ego needs.

Searching For New Interaction Formula

Do not believe what an RM says

what she or he wants or does not want in a mate. Believe only what the RM responds to.

You will hear RM's complain about the mistreatment they received or unhappiness they felt or loss of love they experienced with a mate.

You will even hear the RMs swear they will never, never, never have anything else to do with a former mate who hurt them or tolerate anyone who behaves the way the mate did.

Do not believe it. You will very often find that those same RMs have remarried the former spouses two years later or married someone else who is doing all the same things.

An RM's hot button is the RM's

hot button, like it or not. Use it. It is the only thing the RM will respond to until the RM is weaned away.

Relationship I.D.

An RM may have divorced the person, but the RM has not divorced his or her own personality formula—thought processes and behavior patterns—that went into the relationship. That is the biggest pain of divorce.

The RM now thrashes about, inwardly, trying to create a new relationship formula of behavior—only the old ones are still operative.

One RM complained of his wife being a burden. She was dependent.

Once he left her, though, he found himself worrying about her and how she was making it without him. The relationship formula consisted of her problem of being a burden as also the satisfaction of his feeling needed.

How To BE A Minor Problem

Once you wean your RM away to your style of love, then endear yourself with a tiny problem that is unique to your relationship together.

The problem is usually built in to what attracts the person to you.

One RM loved his wife's compassion for animals and children.

Later on, however, she put pets, then children ahead of him. This problem kept him trying to figure out what he could do to change it, to gain her approval over the other two.

One RM loved her husband's attractiveness. She felt proud to be seen with him; but that automatically made him attractive to other women, which created the threat of competition.

Another RM admired his wife's social savvy and liked the constant flurry of impressive activities and interesting, successful people she brought into his life. At the same time, she was too busy with leadership commitments in social events that she was seldom able to spend time with him in London on business.

One RM admired the high principles of the man she married. Later on, however, his principles became the source of contention.

The source of the problem is usually the same source as the admiration. The problem is built into the admiration. What The RM admires is also the problem that made you interesting. That keeps the challenge alive in a positive way.

Figure out what attracted the person to you, what the person admires in you. You can enhance it to become a minor problem. Minor means "able to be tolerated. Minor means something that annoys only occasionally. It creates a ripple.

It does not destroy the overall balance and harmony of the relationship.

You will simply be better off if you put aside efforts to be perfect and good and simply be whatever you are, just polished.

Having A Weakness

A weakness, on the other hand, creates more of a major league worry in the other person. A weakness poses a slight threat to the relationship.

Because of this, be SURE you use your weakness much, much, much, much more sparingly than you do BEING a minor problem.

A weakness should only show

itself once a year or twice at the most; otherwise, it can absolutely destroy a relationship.

However, a relationship that does not have the enervating rush of a weakness raising its ugly head ("just when you thought it was safe to come into the water" —from the movie Jaws) is vulnerable to the erosion of boredom.

To choose your weakness, you can usually pluck a handy one right out of your own bag of small neuroses.

Maybe you have a roving eye.

Maybe you like the opposite sex a bit too much.

Maybe you drink too much occasionally.

Maybe you flirt.

Maybe you cheat.

Maybe you overspend.

Maybe you lie.

Maybe you are jealous.

Maybe you are a hothead.

Maybe you are unreliable.

Maybe you like redheads.

Maybe you do things that are totally unpredictable and eyebrow raising, like deciding to telephone from Australia because that is where you suddenly decided to go in a moment of questionable whimsy.

The Power Of Having A Weakness

A weakness creates an excitement

that borders on misery. Yet, it challenges the lover to resolve it for the beloved.

I have seen men leave their loyal, devoted wives of twenty years for a woman, perhaps older and less attractive, who sleeps with every man in town.

I am not saying this is RIGHT. I am saying this is FACT. I do not deal with what should work. I deal with what works.

Likewise, I have seen men stay married to women who sleep with every man in town. They just get a loyal, devoted mistress on the side. However, they do not marry the mistress. They use her to keep their marriage together.

No, I do not recommend your

sleeping around since sexually transmitted diseases (STDs) are such a risk. Frankly, that is the only reason I do not recommend it! But, I use it as an example of how important it is to generate excitement in an RM—even if it is unhappy excitement at times. But only at times!

Not constantly.

The Payoff

A weakness makes you human and your RM noble.

Your weakness makes you interesting. It adds complexity, color, depth, and texture to your personality in a relationship.

Most of all, it gives your RM a mission—to 'fix' you—which makes the RM's life more colorful, interesting.

Your weakness demands more of your RM in every way. It demands more understanding, more time, more emotion, more love, more giving. Those are qualities everyone is trying to get from a partner in a relationship. And those are also qualities that if you ASKED for, you would not get and that your RM would feel imposed upon and nagged.

But your weakness stimulates those very qualities in your RM without you ever asking for it.

A Weakness Prevents Boredom

Once boredom really has taken hold to the point that the other person is indulging his/her own weaknesses to fight it off, all your desperate displays of weaknesses in the world will not endear you to your beloved. In fact, it will then grate on his/her nerves and reinforce the need to flee.

At that time, your RM will then be too interested in his/her own weaknesses to bother with yours.

WARNING: You may enjoy the attention your weakness brings you from your RM; then when the problem seems solved and attention wanes, you may fear you are losing your RM and think you have to resort to it again.

If you fall into the trap of thinking this way, then the relationship can never stabilize. A relationship that relies on turbulence as its prime energy is one-dimensional and won't grow.

There has to be enough peace between two people for other traits to mesh between them into a harbor of safety for both of them.

Ways To Apply A Weakness

Once you have chosen a weakness that flatters your RM into thinking he/she can solve your problem for you (creating co-dependence in your RM—that is, they become emotionally dependent upon

your problem to build their egos or needs around). The RM is going to "rescue" you from yourself/problem.

You respond fairly well in the beginning as you follow the RM's corrective advice.

You then have one or two "backsliding" occasions, creating the drama of high emotion in a conflict, confrontation, or fight.

You demur and try, try again.

You respond well and the relationship merges into happy interacting—you, appreciative, your RM, proud.

About six months down the road—or later, depending on the development of your relationship (which

I cannot tell you and neither can anyone else because each relationship has its own pace), you have a mild relapse into your old weakness—MILD—but just enough to restimulate interaction about it between your RM and you.

Your RM is having to correct you again, having to "fix" you, fix your life, and to fix your life together. As long as your RM is hooked into this mode, he/she will NEVER notice anyone else, even if it is a Playboy/Playgirl centerfold, stark naked, in front of them! You are the most involving aspect of the RM's life right now. Your RM has been thrown for a loop and does not know if this can be fixed or not.

You are smart enough to let it be

fixed—for another 12 months. And, after that, I think your best bet is to make it a 12 to 18 month relapse.

Know Who Is In Control

You and the RM cannot both be the problem. If you are worried about whether or not the RM likes you, that means the RM is the one with the weakness and the minor problems. The RM is in control.

One thing is certain. Both of you cannot have the weakness. One person has to be the stabilizer, the nurturer, the forgiver, the wronged, the lover, the

giver—so that means the one with the weakness can bring out those strengths in the other person.

If you both display weaknesses to each other, and neither one is the safety net for the other, then you enter into game-playing, which will eventually wear out the relationship.

Showing your weakness early on, puts you in control. Someone is going to control the relationship. You are in a stronger position, of course, if it is you.

Stay Expensive

Distinguish yourself from the many, many others (and believe me they

are legion, whether or not you know about them) who are after your RM by demanding the finest of treatment, the finest of places, the finest of everything you experience together. The RM will then consider you special.

Never let your RM think she or he is better than you. If there is the slightest intonation, straighten your shoulders, deepen your voice one note into a serious tone, center your eye contact, and verbally dismantle the RM. It is better that the RM think you are too good for the RM than the other way around.

Dating Chemistry

Date as many people as you can.

Dating chemistry works like this: Being alone breeds being alone. Being with dates breeds being with dates. Dating RMs breed dating RMs. Once you date one RM, It will be easier to date others.

It is no mystery...it simply means that the more you do something, the more skilled you become. The more you do something, the more natural it becomes for you, too. And this is true of dating. You **MUST** keep your dating skills up and the only way to do that is to date anybody who is sane and breathing—okay, I am being facetious; but I am also making a true point that you must date, date, date. It attracts the opposite sex more than anything else!

So, keep your dating skills honed

by dating as many people as you can. It not only attracts more dates; but it also adds to the challenge because it means an RM must compete for you.

Positive Challenge Versus Negative Challenge

Some people make the mistake of trying to create a challenge by being cold and haughty or playing hard-to-get.

This is silly since most people identify such behavior as lower social class and phony.

No truly refined person ever acts rude to anyone or snubs someone. But it is more important not to use that method

to create the challenge, because even if it works, initially, it can never bring any happiness to either of you.

You would never be able to let go and be warm and loving together, although you might want to with all your soul.

The precedent would have been set, the rules established, the roles assigned and to change that, changes the reason the person was attracted to you in the first place, and changes the relationship.

Haven't you seen that situation all too often, yourself? In all too many relationships, the challenge is based on trying to make other person love them.

Sometimes the challenge is that

both people are trying to make the other one break down first to admit love. Both are playing haughty, yet staying together, and it becomes stand-off—neither side will give in.

This is one very common reason that relationships end unhappily when they began with such sizzle — because the person who used haughtiness as a challenge to get attention, one day thinks that they have succeeded in getting the person into a relationship and now it is time to get their need met to love someone in return.

So, they begin responding to the devotion of your RM with equal ardor. This only confuses your RM who suddenly does not know how to handle

acceptance and love and does not have to prove him/herself anymore.

The challenge of haughtiness is gone and disappointment turns to disinterest as your RM begins seeking someone else—and then ugly pain ensues.

You may think that, "Well, all I have to do is to never show that I care...just remain haughty acting forever."

If so, then you remain cold-acting and suffer the sadness of unfulfillment. You would have to continue playing hard to get, because once you ever behaved in a warm way, the challenge would be gone and the game that held you together would be over. (My book, ***RICH***

SEX® *The Sexual Dynamics Of Money*
deals with the type of man this attracts in
depth)

Do you really want that?

Don't you deserve a real
relationship where you are safe to be
you? You may think that as long as you
are marrying someone Rich, that you can
act haughty until the day you die.

Maybe. But, I doubt it. You see,
one day, you may want to look a mate
directly in the eyes and say,
unashamedly, "I am crazy about you" (or
whatever words your passion designs).

You want to KNOW that the
person is going to love you all the more
for saying it—not suddenly feel the
challenge is gone and lose interest.

When I speak of Marriage to the Rich, I speak not just of Rich but also of Marriage. Marriage is the warm, soft pillow of life, where you can rest your head safely.

What is the point of having money if you have no rest in your relationship?

Conversely, what is the point of having a relationship if you watch it being destroyed by lack of money.

You can be as lovable and as loving and adorable as you want to be and be worshipped for it, as long as you create a positive challenge of flaws in some other part of your personality.

A subtle challenge continues if your behavior contradicts your words. Perhaps you keep seeing other people.

Perhaps you are more attentive to other people at times.

Just do not use coldness and haughtiness to create your challenge. It is self-defeating and love-defeating.

But remember that being perfect is ‘prim’—and prim is not sexy. Flaws aggravate...and enchant!

*An RM's Domestic
Staff, Employees,
And Associates*

*“Your RM will not like you
more for making
the RM's life easier.”*

—Ginie Sayles

Today's domestic staff in America represents a professional choice by individuals who are often better educated than many of the people in the world—and sometimes better educated than their Rich employers.

Those who excel in a domestic staff are extremely proud of their profession. They execute their work with pride and satisfaction in expert services.

If you have come from a poor background and have not always understood domestic service, your first step is respect for each person and the

duties they perform.

For both men and women, treat your RM's domestic staff and other employees in a friendly, interested manner. Say, "How are you?" in a simple, friendly greeting. Simply be one person saying something to another person.

However, never ask questions about your RM or about previous spouses or other people your RM may be dating. And do not mention anything personal about yourself.

Never confide anything about the RM or about your relationship with the RM.

Above all, do not act as if you are already Lord or Lady of the Manor. Until

you are, the employee probably has more influence than you do in many ways!

Be genuinely friendly but not familiar with your RM's domestic staff and employees.

There are only two reasons for this rule:

One: It is not fair to the people who work for your RM.

Two: It is not appropriate for you. This same rule applies for your RM's office personnel, as well.

One woman used to take an RM's

secretary to lunch. She thought she was being smart to become her buddy and to find out about him. Ha! The clever secretary not only enjoyed a free lunch; but she also planted the wrong information about the RM to misguide the dear lady who was paying for her lunch. The secretary, in the meantime, used information she, too, gleaned during those lunches to eventually win her boss as her own RM!

An RM's Associates And Friends

An RM will want you to be able to hold your own around the RM's friends or associates and around other

people in general when you are together.

You will learn to be friendly, gracious, and not intimidated.

Be vibrant and sincere, keeping your subject matter to positive, happy subjects. Do not gush or overly compliment. Mostly listen and respond while you are learning.

Occasionally, you may encounter opposition.

Someone who feels threatened by you may try to intimidate you with cool behavior, passive facial expressions, or eyes that stare or seem to check you out.

Such people are not worth very much, I assure you. Do not let them scare you. The problem is theirs, not yours. Be ready for them.

Do not behave defensively. Seem not to notice. If, however, you feel it is important to take a body language stand in your own behalf, do so.

Look the person directly in the eye as if your vision goes right through them. Do not reflect that your eyes or face even register anyone being in the path of your vision. They do not exist.

Then, be the first to move your eyes away, as if you did not see anything.

Do not jerk your eyes aside. That looks fearful. Instead, slide your eyes smoothly above their heads, as if they are beneath you.

Fasten your attention on someone who is talking. Keep it there. Then, shift

to turn your body so that your back is to the person who tried to intimidate you.

You do not want to make a habit of this look; but, it can be helpful when someone is trying to intimidate you or to size you up negatively with your RM.

Ex-Spouses And Children

*“Your relationship must not be
second place to your RM’s
past—or you don’t have a
future together”*

—Ginie Sayles

Do not put up with ex-spouses.

Any ex-spouse who still calls for advice or visits or drops by is infringing and has no rights to fairness or anything else — that is why he or she is an EX.

Be fair to your RM's children to the extent that they do not interfere with your RM's relationship with you.

Children frequently compete with a new mate. Feeling threatened, they test their parent to see who means more to the parent.

When you and your RM discuss this, point out that psychology reports that an adult's first responsibility is to

his or her mate, not to a child. I must credit my husband, Reed Sayles, who has a multiple family background, for having taught me this wise lesson.

If your RM is not this wise, you must be. Set this standard early in your relationship.

Once a child is made aware of the parent's relationship priorities, the child actually feels more secure. The child knows she or he is a child and that it is wrong to give them dominion and "spouse-position priority."

Children feel more secure knowing the parameters.

A child may feel that because the child was born before the relationship with you was established, that the child

is entitled to priority over you.

However, one day, the child will be an adult and will fall in love and want to marry. If the RM parent does not like the person the child marries, is the child going to give the parent RM priority over the child's mate? No, of course not. The child is going to marry, anyway. And that is how it should be.

Likewise, the RM should never allow a child to dictate their parent's relationship with someone else. Never.

I am horrified when I learn of couples who ask their children if the children think they should get married or just continue living together—and then they abide by what the children decide!!!

Listen, marriage is a 'primary

relationship between two adults' not a communal relationship.

And because marriage is between adults, children need to be told that their parents are getting married to each other and they are invited to participate in the wedding or not.

But children should never be allowed to grant 'permission' for their parents to marry. It does not speak well of the quality of love and commitment between the adults. Come on!

Children need the tough-love of "No Trespassing" signs in their parent's lives as much as they do tender love.

A parent's primary adult relationship is a "No Trespassing" sign of foremost importance.

Back to Ex-Spouses: Any ex-spouse who questions the children about their visits and expresses an opinion to the children about it, is vicariously continuing a relationship with the RM (although nobly masquerading as simply interested in the RM's welfare).

Be fair to you! Once sexual exclusivity is established, you owe your allegiance to each other first. Discuss the fact that you both owe your allegiance to each other over anyone else

That means you must both let your children know you love them as much as ever and that you love each other as your primary adult relationship-and because you do, there are guidelines for them to

understand.

You **MUST** clearly proclaim the superiority of your position. You **MUST** or you will lose your RM.

You are not second place to someone's past or you do not have a future!

Do not accuse your RM of still caring for the ex-spouse and do not remind the RM of how badly the ex-spouse treated the RM. That gives the ex-spouse too much power.

When you speak of the ex-spouse at all, do so as if you consider the ex-spouse as pitiful, pathetic...a loser...powerless...inferior.

Remind your RM that if the divorce is final that there is no reason

for contact between the ex-spouse and the RM for advice or help.

Divorce means..."you are on you are own!" and husbandly or wifely duties end when living together ends.

*How To Handle
Trouble
In RM City*

*“It is not an RM’s
responsibility to be good to
you. It is your responsibility
to ‘teach’ the RM how to treat
you.”*

—*Ginie Sayles*

How do you handle trouble in RM City? That depends on how committed the involvement has been between you and your RM—and especially whether or not you are living together.

If You Are Not Living Together

First, if things aren't moving

along, cast doubt about YOUR feelings for your RM. Express a vague discontent by being "unsure" of your feelings, without really doing anything major about it. Be a little distracted at times.

Pull something. Go out of town without saying so. Disappear. Do not answer your telephone for 24—48 hours and do not return calls for awhile.

When you are back together be more wonderful and happier than ever before. Have one or two moody, distracted moments. If your RM cares at all for you, this will create a little anxiety for your RM.

Do not pull this too often or it may lose its effectiveness.

If You Are Living Together

If you are living together and your RM was due home at, say, 6:00 p.m. but hasn't made it home by 9:00 p.m., then YOU leave and stay gone all night.

Do not pack a bag, just take what you would normally have with you when you are out during the day. Then check into a motel and do not telephone home. Do not. And do not park up the street, watching to see when your RM gets in.

Watch a movie in your motel room, go to the bar, talk on the telephone to someone your RM does not know and will never know, or something to keep

yourself from telephoning or going back.

Let your RM arrive home and discover you are not there. Let your RM be the one to wait up for you, demanding where the hell you have been all night when you gently unlock the front door.

Do not acknowledge—EVER—not ever in your entire life—that you waited for your RM...or that you were ever aware that the RM was late.

Just swear you have not been in bed with anyone (true). You got tied up earlier in the day and did not get back earlier.

("Doing what?!?")

"Working...shopping..."), you had some drinks at happy hour, got to talking to a nice, interesting person you met there

(do not give the name of a friend because that can be checked or betrayed) and the time got away.

You tried to call once but the line was busy (an obvious lie because your RM was not home).

You felt you'd had too much to drink to drive home, so you pulled over to the side of the road. You did not hear your mobile phone alerts of any text messages or calls because you fell asleep and luckily, no one bothered you.

Stick with that story until the day you die. Never admit in a guilty or sentimental moment that you made it up as a ploy.

You may think you will not need future ploys and you probably will not

but you may, so do not confess. Just say that you won't ever do it again.

In other words, whatever your RM intended to pull on you, catch it quickly and outwit your RM by making him think you are pulling it first.

Such situations are common between couples just before they give in and give up their truly single lifestyle and settle into something more committed.

It may not be these exact circumstances; but, usually, there is some rebellious scene. The way you handle it will determine whether it is a final fling the RM has, or the beginning of a new trend that gradually means the end.

Destructive Scenario

If you, instead, wait at home until your RM shows up at 2:00 a.m. and either say nothing or create a scene of accusations, you have just positioned yourself as the victim, the loser.

Your RM will then feel justified to begin pulling away and looking for an equal.

If, on the other hand, your RM's behavior backfires and you are the one who is not there when your RM gets home; you will have positioned your RM as the victim, the possible loser. Your RM will become more concerned with losing you and will straighten up and fly

right.

Do not abase yourself by giving explanations, excuses, or long, drawn-out apologies.

Reinforce a strong self-image at all times. Be happy and warm, but withdraw your approval from time to time.

Withdrawing Your Approval

Withdrawing your approval means not to say anything when your RM expects you to after the RM has explained or showed you something.

Look at your RM, moving your

eyes slowly from one eye to the other without a word, your face either passive or just slightly stern.

When you speak, change the subject.

If your presses back to the subject and asks what you think, look again with deliberation and say, "Oh, fine, fine" in such a way that the RM does not believe that is how you feel.

If your RM keeps saying, "You do not like it, do you?" Say, "I gave you my answer. I have nothing more to say about it."

You should withdraw your approval about once a week with a new RM to create curiosity and a need in the RM to win your approval.

For an RM you have been seeing for awhile, do not withdraw your approval any more often than every two weeks to once a month—just to keep your RM from taking you for granted.

You can defeat yourself if you use it too often. People need more strokes than they do the frustration of withdrawn approval.

If frustration builds too much from not receiving more stroking than withdrawn approval, your RM WILL begin looking elsewhere for praise stroking and, I assure you, an RM can always get it, much to your loss.

Overused withdrawal of your approval can have the same unhappy effect of low-class "haughtiness." Use

sparingly.

Cheating

In my book, *Rich Sex*® *The Sexual Dynamics Of Money*, I devote several chapters to cheating—the causes, the cures, the types or RMs who do and don't.

So, rather than repeat myself in this book, which is already long enough; I will just say a few of things about it.

One thing I have noticed is that some men begin cheating on their wives after a baby is born. Not all men, of course; but in a number of cases, they do.

The best I can surmise about it is that:

Perhaps a man may feel they are not a 'couple' anymore in the way they were; Or a man feels he has been replaced (or that his importance has been replaced) by the baby

Suddenly, his wife is a mom, not a lover. And a man's role at home changes (as it should to some degree). Romance is replaced by responsibility.

Marriage sex is now encumbered. An affair feels like unencumbered responses.

Loser/Victim Threats versus Winner Control

There can be a lot of pain when cheating is discovered. If you blow your cool and go wild, it is completely understandable. If you threaten to end the relationship, you will be on weak ground later if you reconcile.

The Winner way to handle it is not to acknowledge it. Instead, begin to cheat on your RM.

“Ginie, I don’t want him to think he has put something over on me and that I am too stupid to know what is going on,” you may say. And confronting him may make you feel that you have ‘shown him’ he can’t get away with fooling you.

But – and this is a big but – IF you can act as if you never knew and that you were the one who found someone else

without his knowing it, you will come out the winner.

True, he may break up with you. But, my dear friend, if he is cheating anyway and if you throw a fit and then take him back with his promises never to cheat again; he probably will cheat again. He has learned you will take him back because you did before. You will be back to the same pain and you will look like the loser.

At some point a relationship in pain will end. How much cooler for you and how much more prestige you will have in his eyes if he discovers you have been cheating on him while he thought he was the one doing the cheating. His ego will be destroyed instead of yours. You

may hurt inside; but you will be the winner.

If you feel you just cannot be this cool because you are boiling over inside—and yes, you may feel as if you are dying from heartbreak—well, be kind to yourself and forgive yourself for expressing your true feelings.

Do not let yourself get to the point of following him or digging through his trash or checking his credit card bills or buying a gun to kill him, or to kill the other woman, or to kill yourself. If you do, you will be betraying yourself more than he ever betrayed you. You are more valuable than that—and there will be another RM who will love you more. If you found one, you can find dozens of

them.

Drugs

One young woman was dating a prominent physician who was using cocaine. Unaware that he was being watched by the law, he packed it in a briefcase to take on a trip. He and the young woman were standing at the airport, when he suddenly saw law enforcement coming toward him and realized he was about to be busted.

“Here, hold this!” He said to the young woman and pushed the briefcase in her hands.

I am SO proud of her. She was unaware of the impending drug bust but

she was not about to hold his briefcase for him (and there are so many other young women who would have innocently said, “Okay” and held it for him).

“Hold your own damn briefcase!” She said and shoved it back into his hands. The law enforcement team had witnessed what he was trying to do and stepped in to arrest him.

He knew that if they arrested him and he was not holding the briefcase, their case would be weaker for conviction and that she would take the fall.

She refused to be his stooge. And being a stooge is what you may become if your RM has the money to protect

himself and you do not.

Drugs are in rampant use among the Rich because wherever money is, the drug dealers are going to try to make drugs sound glamorous and exciting and socially acceptable.

How To Handle Social Situations Where Drugs Are Used

Here is one example:

When I was training as a stockbroker in New York City, a group of stockbrokers invited me to a party. When I got there, everyone was sitting in a circle, passing

around a headphone playing the number one group from one to the other, along with a drug joint. People in the circle chatted amiably while the headphone and smoked from the joint as it made the rounds with the headphone.

When the headphones were passed to me, I put them on and then the joint was passed to me. I held it but did not put it to my mouth and did not pretend to, either, as I briefly listened to the music. So I did not participate in the drugs but I did not lecture or seem shocked or offended, either.

After a few seconds, I simply passed the headphone to the stockbroker at my right, who was a former Catholic priest. When he secured it on his head, I

handed him the joint making the rounds that I had not used.

Without batting an eye, he took a hit from it. The former Catholic priest cared more about ‘fitting in’ and social acceptance than he did about his own health.

Your number one job in life is to look after what is best for you, period. That is your number one job! It is not your job to please someone else by compromising your health or well-being. If you do that, you are selling your self-worth to the opinions of someone else.

Oh yes, there are physicians who use so-called ‘social drugs.’ There are lawyers, judges, heirs, athletes...the list is endless...of people you would never

suspect of drug use.

I do not consider drugs a ‘bad person’ issue. I consider it a health issue—and only a moral issue when it causes harm to people—for instance an automobile wreck that kills someone.

Fortunately, there are some Rich luminaries, like Donald Trump, who will not use drugs or drink alcohol. I suspect he knows that anything that changes your awareness weakens your judgment—which, in turn, can damage your life.

The Greatest Weakness Of The Rich

When people are using the drugs

they “pooh-pooh” this type of advice. They do not think it is dangerous. They think they are taking drugs ‘socially.’

The greatest weakness of the Rich is not drugs; but the belief that they are immune to addiction. Money is a great protection from many things; but not from addiction. Money is an enabler of addiction.

And why do pushers want you to take it? So you will need them and they will get your money instead of you.

Just because something is legal does not mean it is good for you. Rat poison is legal to buy, but would you take it? Of course not. You know it would kill you. Tobacco, which was promoted for years as chic and is legal,

is proven to cause lung cancer, restricted arteries, and smells awful.

Eventually, I think drugs will have to be legalized, just as they were in the 1800s because it costs more to fight drug rings and keeps us from taxing it as a commodity. Plus, it puts the responsibility back in your hands—to choose your own good health over a popular fad that can destroy your life.

Many drug lords do not take drugs themselves because they are too smart to do so. They know it is a sucker's game. And that it is the easiest way to get rich because a drug user soon will not have a choice of taking drugs; but will need it. Addiction by the Rich is the best insurance for wealth a drug lord has —

especially since the drug lord will not use it himself.

Drug lords enlist street addicts to become pushers; and, of course, drug pushers target the Rich and children of the Rich.

Drugs are a common problem among the Rich. Notice that people who are involved with drugs are dominated by it. They often build their lives and activities around it. Drugs are what they talk about – the next high.

At some point, you may have to confront the drug issue when you are dating an RM. **Memorize this:** taking drugs because you love an RM is the quickest way to eventually lose your RM because you lose yourself.

A young woman married a Rich old money heir who introduced her to cocaine on her birthday, presenting it to her instead of a birthday cake with Rich friends he knew would participate.

Not wanting to embarrass or to disappoint any of them, she used it. It became a part of their social life over the next several years. When he decided to divorce her, he cited her drug use as a major reason, denying her true claims that he used it, too. He was granted the divorce and she lost everything.

Drugs have been around forever. I found that when I dated RMs and they learned I would not participate in drugs, they took their cue from me and they stopped. It was as if they were looking

for a person with healthier choices.

If the RM did not ask me out again, I felt lucky. But that rarely happened.

Whatever you choose to do in this matter is **up to you**, of course. Just keep your health foremost in your mind.

Prescription Drugs

When I asked my physician how safe it was to use an over-the-counter sleep aid, he asked, “Would you like some Ambien?”

That was the last time I ever went to that doctor. He did not ask me about possible health reasons for occasional insomnia or question my sleep habits.

Nope, he was letting me, a patient with no pharmaceutical training, decide if I wanted to take a mind-altering sedative whose dangerous side-effects have been cited numerous times in the media.

Certainly, there are cases of people with schizophrenia, who may need to stay on prescription drugs. I am not talking about illnesses with life threatening potential.

I am talking about RMs who visit a doctor and are offered prescriptions for conditions that they may be able to control with a lifestyle change.

Drug companies come up with ever-widening symptoms to be able to describe for the use of a drug. ADHD is one example for very young children

who are prescribed amphetamines, which are addictive. Some physicians believe that such drugs on a child's brain as it is growing, may have bad or far-reaching effects.

Today, there are numerous Alternative Medicines with Natural Ingredients and foods that promote brain health so it just seems logical to try those first. Even diabetes, blood pressure, heart disease, and high cholesterol can often be eliminated by changing food habits and lifestyle and without the dangerous side effects of prescription medicine.

On PBS, recently, I heard a woman speak of U.S President Theodore Roosevelt that if he had grown up today,

he would have been diagnosed with ADHD, put on Ritalin and the world would never have known his genius as president.

Another dangerous side effect of prescription medicine that a person takes for the rest of that person's life is the financial side effect. I sometimes wonder if drug companies are any different from drug cartels.

Part V

Marriage Strategies

47

*Who Marries The
Rich?*

*“The Rich will marry, anyway,
why not to YOU?”*

—Ginie Sayles



... Very expensive 5 Star Cuisine!

Copyright © 1996, 2011 Glain Sayles
ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

How much money must someone

have in order for you to ‘marry up?’ That is the easiest answer of all.

If you are earning \$15,000 a year and if you then someone who earns \$50,000 a year, you have definitely ‘married up!’ And some people work their way up through consecutive marriages. That, my dear, is up to you. But realize that if you marry someone who makes substantially more than you do, you have succeeded in marrying up.

Whether it is on the lower end of financial improvement or on the higher end of entering true wealth, there are basically four types of people who want to marry the Rich:

One: Men and women who have money themselves from a previous marriage or family background and who want a mate from their own social and financial strata. These people can do well because they know their way around the financial terrain. However, they sometimes need help because they have ‘too much’ in common with their peers to be interesting.

Two: Men and women who want a Rich Mate to bankroll their own careers or simply to upgrade their standard of living if they have no career. These people can do well because they are ambitious enough to take calculated risks to make it happen.

Three: Men and women with a basic self-confidence that they can make a Rich Mate happy and have a desire to do so. They are unafraid of social demands they may not yet know how to handle. They fully believe they can rise to the challenge of handling the social life and personal life of marriage to a Rich Mate. These people can do well simply because of their self-esteem. They do not suffer the feelings of inferiority that can hold them back

Four: Men and women who have emerged from a previous, wasted relationship of humiliating poverty with a mate who would not work or who used

them and now they feel a bit "had."
These people stand a really great chance if they are ready to be on the taking end of a relationship for a change and they will give only what will be appreciated. They are unwilling to put up with anything but the best financial treatment from now on because they understand, bitterly, the dynamics of sex, love, and money.

So, let's turn our attention toward marriage so you can tie the knot with that seven to ten figure bank account and maybe avoid knotty prenuptial agreements.

What about love? I do not see how you can help loving anyone to some

extent who is kind and generous with you. I cannot love someone who is mean and stingy—which is the opposite from kind and generous.

If your relationship has been consummated in bed before marriage, accelerate toward marriage.

The late research psychologist, Dr. Joyce Brothers, said that both sexes seek the positive qualities of their mothers.

Both sexes. That means women seek husbands who have the positive qualities of their mothers, just as men seek wives who have the positive qualities of their mothers.

Find out the positive qualities of their mothers. Then find out what some

of the negative qualities of their mothers were. Usually, an RM still has feelings to resolve in what the RM perceived as negative qualities of his/her mother, and those qualities likely showed up in an ex-spouse.

Know your RM's views of people living together before marriage and if the RM has done so before marriage before. If so, the RM will do it, again.

Know the RM's religious upbringing and views held about sex. Fundamentalist upbringing can create sexual conflicts of marrying someone they have "lived in sin" with. You

may not want to live with an RM from this background before marriage.

Get a description of the RM's parents' relationship with each other. Was the RM's marriage in any way like that of the RM's parents?

The answers you receive from this query can give you an idea of your RMs marriage profile.

You can provoke the sensitive issues that surround the profile to get a response from your RM.

Mixed Marriages

“Romeo and Juliet had the same problem—namely, that they were not supposed to marry outside their socially-approved marriage choices.”

—Ginie Sayles

We all grow up with it on some level—prejudice against marrying outside of our approved choices. Peer pressure, parental pressure, social pressure, religious pressure, cultural pressure—all conspire to keep you where you are ‘taught’ that you belong. If you marry outside your approved mate choices, you have a mixed marriage—much like Romeo and Juliet.

Somehow, it is always wonderful when relationships triumph over superficial differences. But it is important to know that some mixed

marriages are harder to resolve than others.

Mixed marriages tend to run in these types:

Parental/Family Disapproval of a Mixed Marriage

Social-Financial Class Mixed Marriage

Education Level Mixed Marriage

Ethnicity Mixed Marriage

Cultural Mixed Marriage

Religious Mixed Marriage

Age Difference Mixed Marriage

Same Gender Marriage

All the following examples

are true stories, with different names.

Remember, the story of Romeo and Juliet is based on two real lovers who lived in 1300s Italy. The couple had the same problem of marrying outside their socially and parentally approved choices.

Parental/Family Disapproval Mixed Marriage

If you need your parents' or your family's approval before you marry

someone; you are not mature enough to marry at all. Marriage is between two people and no one else. An RM should marry you, not your family and vice versa.

And once you are married, you should both agree NEVER to discuss your marriage problems with family members unless it is a situation of abuse and you need their help getting out of the marriage.

The Good Story

A man in California told me his sister gave him a copy of an earlier edition of this *How To Marry The*

Rich book in which I suggest a person ‘get married’ without telling anyone and then announce it later when everyone has to accept the marriage and can do nothing to prevent it (see Strategy 8).

The reason his sister gave my book to him was because he was dating an RM and the RM’s mother never approved of anyone she dated. So, he followed advice I have given that you marry in secret and announce it later.

He did this by suggesting to the RM that they take a trip to Las Vegas to enjoy the shows. She agreed and while they were having a wonderful time, he said, “Oh look, here is a chapel. Let’s get married right now, sweetheart. We love each other and it will be so

romantic.”

He extracted a ring from his pocket that he had brought with him. She said yes, and they married. I have met him since that time (which is how I know of this) and after three years of marriage, they are still happy together.

“Her mother is a pain to deal with,” he admitted; “but she has finally accepted our marriage. There is nothing she can do about it, now.”

It is amazing how many Las Vegas marriages my book has inspired and how much it helped a couple take control of their own choice to marry.

The Not-So-Good Story

One consultee told me he is so close to his family that he cannot imagine marrying anyone who did not fit in with his family. So when he married Amber, his family enthusiastically supported his choice. She was fun, lively, smart, and they enjoyed having her as part of the family.

Unfortunately, like any other couple who must adjust to each other and work out differences in their marriage, he discussed their marriage problems with his family members and close friends (which he—or you—should never do—Never).

This resulted in his brother calling Amber and advising her to be

better to his brother. This betrayal of confidence regarding their marriage hurt Amber deeply (which is understandable). She divorced him and is now married to someone else.

Another of my students, a lovely 46 year old widow, met a fabulous RM who wanted to marry her. She was thrilled; but after he met her 80 year old mother, who ridiculed him to her, she broke up with him. Her mother died a few years later and he, in the meantime, had married and was living a glamorous life with his new bride.

My student—now alone and sad—said to me, "My mother was afraid of losing me to him. Mother had me all to herself after my husband died. I guess

she thought I would not take care of her, which is ridiculous. She ruined him for me. I never liked displeasing my mother. Now, I wish I had."

Social Class Mixed Marriage

Social class is a broad base of people who are 'like you.' It is a segment of society who shares your values and overall activities. Popularity standing differs a little from general Social Class in that you are dealing with a tighter circle of close friends you care about.

The Good Story

A Rich man fell in love with a woman who was from a lower financial class. They were both divorced and both had children. He was an executive who met her when she worked as a hostess at a nice restaurant where he frequently lunched with other businessmen.

They married and their children from their previous marriages were in attendance. The children seemed to like each other and were welcoming of their parent's new spouse.

But that did not last long. His ex-wife was jealous of his bride and resented that her children liked his new wife. Soon, she was pumping them for

information every time they returned from a visit with their father and his new wife and then ridiculed everything they told her about the woman.

Eventually, her attitude toward the woman seeped into the children and they began to be rude to her when they visited.

Worse, his ex-wife had the same friends, charities, and social circles her ex-husband had. Crossing paths with him and his new wife was intolerable for her. She began a social campaign against her ex-husband's wife by deriding her social class background. Behind her back, the ex-wife spoke of her of being a gold digger and soon the women and wives of their mutual social circle were

ostracizing his new wife.

Her ex-husband was so happy and so in love that he knew his new wife did not deserve this. So, he talked it over with her and they chose another major city where he could continue his business and they moved there.

Instantly, he donated large sums of money to the opera, also to a major charity, and they were welcomed as members in a prestigious country club. He knew he was ‘buying’ a new social life for them but he did not care.

After all, he knew how the system works—that paying your way in with large donations makes an impact and everyone has to be nice to you. Soon, real friendships are formed that are not

tainted by your past and everything takes care of itself.

He urged his wife to be involved in the Opera Guild and soon they enjoyed the social life together they had planned.

When his children came to see him, he made it clear to them that they must be respectful and friendly with his new wife or they would not be visiting again. He told them he would never pry about their mother and he expected it to be reciprocal. Fortunately, they loved their father as much as they loved their mother and the social class differences of his new wife became insignificant to them.

The Not-So-Good Story

Another situation of social influence was that of a popular ‘Beauty’ and an unpopular ‘Bad Boy.’ He was very good looking and together the Beauty and the Bad Boy made a handsome couple.

The Beauty experienced ‘peer pressure’ not to date him. Her friends did not ridicule him. Instead, they were seriously concerned about his past.

Our Beauty ignored her friends and soon she found they were not her friends anymore. She did not care and soon moved in with him. They planned

to marry in the summer.

But one night, he did not come home. By noon the next day, everyone knew he had been arrested for robbing a service station in a small town sixty miles away. Worse yet, he shot and killed the station attendant.

Education Level Mixed Marriage

Two people can have equal financial levels; but very different educational backgrounds. Resolving it can be a test of resilience in some cases.

The Good Story

A Blue Collar Millionaire on the East Coast was a high school drop-out who worked as a shipyard laborer for years. He worked his way up the job ranks for a company that supplied parts to the shipyard. Eventually, he started his own parts business in another coastal state and as his success grew, and he bought out his competitors in other areas.

He fell in love with a woman who had a doctorate degree in English from an Ivy League university.

Their date life was challenging. She invited him to a formal party of her social peers and he arrived in slacks and

a polo shirt; but good naturedly went back to change into one of the few suits he owned.

At her upper crust parties, the general conversation was often outside his range of experience and frankly outside his range of interest so that he could not discuss their topics with ease.

On the other hand, she was able to dress down and to enjoy occasional beer and fish and chips with his friends at pubs or backyard barbeques or group picnics.

When they realized they were in love and wanted to marry, they faced the truth of their social differences. They agreed on one major point: they did not want to live separate social lives.

This meant they would always go together to parties with her friends and to parties with his friends...even if they were uncomfortable and even if one of them did not want to go.

Finally, they asked themselves the question of “What about years from now when love is not new?—and they agreed they would honor this commitment no matter what.

They married and their marriage revealed a lot to both of them. In her case, a few of her social class equals quietly dropped her from their social list; but most of them ended up liking her husband quite a lot.

For one thing, he applied himself to getting to know her friends when he

went to a social event with her; and he had her choose his clothing for those events.

Most importantly of all, her true friends took their cue from her. She behaved as if her husband were one of them and eventually they did, too.

She learned to enjoy his friends, too. The wife of one of his associates became her very best friend. This mixed marriage of educational opposites is successful.

The Not-So-Good Story

Cora grew up in a world of refinement and private schools—beginning with kindergarten and prep

schools to several graduate degrees from a renowned prestigious university for women.

Through a charity Cora supported, she met Sam, a wealthy man whose education consisted of public schools from grade school through high school and then to a state college.

A dynamic self-made millionaire, Sam was unlike any man she had ever known. However, he knew which fork to use and how to properly dress for social events, so she felt that some of the rough edges of his personality were charming.

After they had been together several months, he told her he wanted to completely refurnish his three-story house in a style she would want to live

in. “Spare no expense,” he said, “Make it something you would be proud of.”

Thinking this was tantamount to a marriage proposal, she worked with decorators until it looked like a dream home in a magazine. He was very happy with it, and said, “I knew you could give this place class.”

About a week later, after a day spent with one of the charities she supported, she returned to his house where she had been living and found her belongings packed in boxes and waiting at the door.

His housekeeper tried to be very kind when she told Cora that Sam was in Hawaii on a honeymoon. The housekeeper seemed as surprised and

upset as Cora. She had not known that Sam's frequent business trips to a neighboring city had included romance and now marriage.

Heartbroken, Cora sought the comfort of a counselor (shrink) who helped her work through her rage and pain and feelings of humiliation.

However, Cora fully blamed his educational background. "I had never dated a man who went to a state university," she said. "Privately educated men learn honorable behavior and decency, even in matters of the heart."
”

AUTHOR'S NOTE:

Personally, I think his

education had little to do with it. Any level of education—even private school education would never have overcome the fact that he was just a cad with crass, cowardly behavior.

Ethnic Mixed Marriage

In many evolved countries, today, mixed ethnic marriages are increasingly commonplace. Asian, Anglo, Hispanic, African American, Indian (India) Native American, Middle-Eastern are among the ethnic groups that now intermarry

without a second thought.

There is not as much a problem with ethnicity today in mixed marriages; and if there is a problem, it tends to be based on the culture or religion associated with a particular ethnicity.

The Good Stories

The marriage of an Anglo RM to an African-American woman in San Francisco is cherished by both for the caliber of love and similar interests they share.

In another situation, a wealthy African American male physician in Arkansas fell in love with a beautiful Anglo woman patient who is wheel-

chair bound. This couple also cherishes the marriage they have.

A Hispanic RM I know dotes on his Asian wife.

These couples had the courage to love each other and to appreciate their ethnic differences.

The Not-So-Good Stories

The not-so-good stories hardly exist anymore where racial or ethnic differences occur in a mixed marriage.

Most of us know the old stories of couples being shunned by family and friends of one ethnicity or of both. And the stories of their children suffering the

consequences; but, as I said, that is not prevalent today in most countries, although there may be some incidences of it within some families.

Truth is, once babies are born into a marriage, the grandparents learn there is no difference and love the babies completely. This is the future in most countries and the key to diminishing racial/ethnic bias.

Religious Mixed Marriage

Wars are fought over—and it is getting worse; so how can a couple in love, who are from opposing religions,

accomplish what religion itself, cannot?

The Good Story

One of my best friends was a Jewish girl, Sarah, who fell in love with Tom, a Christian man. Sarah was an only child from a well-to-do family (I loved her parents). Tom was a decent, average, hard-working man from a well-respected family.

Sarah and Tom kept their relationship secret for several months, until, finally, they eloped.

But before they eloped Sarah and Tom made a pact that they would respect and participate in each other's religions; but they would never proselytize, never

try to influence each other to switch faiths.

And they have kept that pact. Now married 40+ years, they remain true to their commitment to each other.

Tom attends Sarah's religious services and observes all Jewish holidays with her. Keeping her part of the bargain, Sarah is in church with Tom every Sunday and observes his Christian holidays with him. Some of their holidays overlap and yet they observe both.

Their children were brought up to attend both faiths with their parents and to make their own choices. Neither parent pushed them one way or the other.

Instead, they loved each other

enough to respect their religious differences and set that role model for their children. Impressive!

The Not-So-Good Story

However, another mixed marriage did not fare very well, at all. Judy was a middle-aged woman who married Paul, a widower of a different faith. His children were adults with their own lives but who visited from time to time.

When they married Judy and Paul agreed that they would each attend their own religious practices separately.

This seemed to work reasonably well for the first year or so; but

increasingly, Paul and his adult children and their families would make verbal barbs in Judy's presence, ridiculing her religion.

She came to me for a private consultation and wept. When her mother died, her husband would not attend the funeral with her. After the funeral Paul and his children laughed in front of her about the teachings of her faith.

I told her that it was not their religion that made them cruel, but that he and his children were cruel by nature and simply used religious differences as an excuse to justify it.

And then I told her I believed her situation to be intolerable, that their persecution of her would only get worse

if she remained in the marriage.

Like so many religions, there are followers who believe they are right and you are wrong. There can never be peace in that primitive thought process.

Only when two couples of different faiths can say “My religion is right for me and yours is right for you and **“the only wrong is to persecute each other”** is there any hope for religious mixed marriages to succeed.

Religious Authority And Marriage

”Morality is doing what

is right regardless of what you are told. Religion is doing what you are told, regardless of what is right.”

—J. V. S. (twitter)

One marriage that blew my mind was between a couple, both in their forties, who would not marry unless their non-denominational pastor gave them his blessing. The pastor would not give them his blessing unless they followed his advice to wait five years and then come back to him and address the issue again. And, of course, they were not to have sex in the meantime

(wow!)

The man in this couple was a well-educated oil man and the woman was a well-educated and successful business owner. I mention they were each well educated to point out that they did not have the excuse of ignorance. I have seen less educated people who were not as gullible as these two adults.

But these two very nice and decent people did not marry for a year out of the five because of this one pastor.

Finally, the oil man mentioned it to a friend of his who told him to find another church or to have a civil ceremony, which is legally binding and sacred to a couple.

Fortunately, this forty-something

couple finally had enough sense to go ahead and get married! They are still married and celebrate their anniversary every year with great happiness.

I think most people were amazed with the Andrea Yates marriage. She is the woman who killed her five children. Closer scrutiny shows that her husband and she were living their marriage to the standards of some minister.

Why hand over your life decisions to someone else? Never do that! If you believe in God, realize that He made you and gave you a brain for your personal decisions.

If you do not have enough sense and love for each other to decide to marry and to live your marriage with

common sense and love, and, instead, to turn control of your brain and love over to someone else, you do not have enough sense or love to marry, period. And I mean it.

I do not care what sanctions a minister may claim to have, never, ever trust another human being (and a cleric is just a human being with human frailties) with your life. **That is why you have a brain...to make your own choices.**

Culturally Mixed Marriage

Culture is a mindset trained into

people to accept a pecking order set up by someone else who declares themselves at the top of the pecking order—and no one questions it!

Sometimes the culture manipulates ‘religion’ to keep people in line with their thinking.

Culture is probably the most difficult mix to overcome; and may be impossible in too many cases. The reason is that you are dealing with a behavioral code based on a mindset trained into people to accept a pecking order set up by someone else who declares themselves at the top of the pecking order—and no one questions it! Sometimes the culture manipulates ‘religion’ to keep people in line with

their thinking.

Culture is probably the most difficult mix to overcome; and may be impossible in too many cases.

Remote control of an individual happens through repetitive teachings (especially from childhood) of what to believe.

I do not have a ‘good story’ to tell you about culturally-mixed marriages, although I hope there are some.

In many cases, the following may exist:

One: An American ‘slum culture’ of violence. An RM married a woman from such a culture and her brothers robbed him, were in and out of jail, and

beat the women in their lives.

Two: Foreign culture traditions.

The mother of one of my best friends told me that her college roommate married a man from another country. When they moved to his country, she discovered he had a harem of wives and she was just another one.

When her parents did not hear from her, they went to his country and made inquiries. They learned where she was, but when they went to visit, they were not allowed to see her.

Fortunately, her family had money and political connections in the USA; but it took several years and many complicated situations for them to get

her out of his harem and out of his country.

Three: Another woman married a man of a culture that believed women were to be subjected to men and also told how to dress. It is amazing to me that a woman can allow herself to be indoctrinated to accept being treated as an inferior but this woman accepted his culture in order to marry him.

She was beaten, their daughters were beaten, and she was forced to erase her existence in clothes that made her body invisible to others. Her husband's culture also believed that if their daughter chose someone outside their culture, he could kill her, which he

did. He actually murdered his daughter for choosing to leave their culture.

Some of these cultures also try to control a woman's ability to enjoy sex to by controlling her body through the extremely painful practice of

'female circumcision' by cutting off her clitoris, and sometimes the labia, of (a girl or young woman) as a traditional practice— **this to PREVENT her experiencing sexual pleasure. Don't they realize that if they believe in God, that God designed her body and her sexuality—and they are committing heresy by tampering with**

it?

Cultural differences are the most difficult to overcome, especially where women are concerned.

Culturally mixed marriages that deny women equal rights with a man in their culture or justify rape or beatings within a marriage are primitive and their crude codes of conduct can never provide a fulfilling marriage. Marriage should be between equals—couples of equal rights and equal respect.

Age Difference Mixed Marriage

Age differences can be exhilarating. For my part, I preferred men who were much older or younger because I found that men my age were not very interesting. They had all the same problems and life events.

Men from a different generation brought interesting perspectives to my world and infused our time together with fascination.

The biggest problems with age differences show up when the age of one of you affects health, sex, or activities together. It is a sad time; but in many ways, if the connection between you is deep and you value the early years, this can be a rewarding time of gentleness, love, protection, and special value for

the time remaining.

Same Sex Marriage

The law has finally recognized the right of two people to marry without dictating their genders—and, like it or not, the law must be accepted.

Whatever the views of religious zealots who self-righteously and smugly judge same sex couples; it is really none of their business.

If people feel it is an affront to their religious beliefs, well, that is their problem. Our country is at its best when we keep religion and politics separate. Yes, adjusting to new roles can be confusing initially but the world will

adjust. And, after all, same sex marriages are no different from opposite sex marriages when it comes to divorces and such. Life is life and marriage is marriage.

Compassion, good will, and nonjudgmental views will do more for your own soul than all the laws that can be passed to force other people to live according to a particular religion.

And many same sex couples love God in one faith or another. And I, for one, believe God is love and that love is greater, mightier, and more encompassing than any of us mere mortals can imagine. We do not have a small God.

The Not-So-Good Story

Bill and Joe lived together for fifteen years. They met mid-life and both were tired of the Gay Bar scene and wild parties of their youth. For the first time, they each knew this was the lifetime commitment.

When they settled down, they moved into Bill's house that he'd owned before they met. Years passed and then Bill fell ill.

Faithfully, Joe looked after Bill, nursed him, cleaned him, fed him, and cleaned up after him when he could not control his body functions.

At last, Bill was diagnosed with advanced cancer and hospitalized. At this point, Bill's elderly parents and blood relations were the only ones allowed to visit and the only ones allowed to make medical decisions on Bill's behalf—even though Bill kept asking for Joe.

When Bill died soon after he was hospitalized, Joe had no say-so in the final arrangements and disposition of Bill's body. And then, Bill's family sold Bill's house, telling Joe he would have to move.

The tragedy of this story is obvious. Joe had no marital rights to protect him or to protect his position with Bill, even though Joe had been the

dedicated one to take care of Bill during his illness as home.

Marriage could have equalized the rights of Joe, as they should have been. "

If you are gay and you decide not to marry, you owe it to each other to have a legal contract "Non-marital Cohabitation Agreement" that gives each of you the same privileges as a spouse, spelling out medical, final, and property rights for as long as the two of you are living together.

There should also be 'exit' terms spelled out to end the relationship and to end the rights if you are no longer living together.

Keys To Success In Any Mixed Marriage

You may have noticed that the “Good Stories” in each category had couples who knew the odds that faced them and decided on their own a course of action to protect their marriages. It boiled down to a commitment they made—and kept! You want to be sure your mixed marriage can work despite pressure against it, consider the following:

—You both commit that Your Marriage is the Number One Priority for each of you—**over** friends,

children, parents, siblings, other family, career, ministers of differing religious doctrines.

—Before you defy your heritage, religion, race, parents, friends, be sure this person will stick to a simple agreement and that you will, too. A commitment to participate in each other's religion, social activities, or always to socialize together, et cetera...is permanent. In other words, ten, fifteen, twenty years from now if the initial passion has fizzled, that this commitment will not be changed; but always respected as non-negotiable. Otherwise, you should part ways then.

—You and your spouse must NEVER be subjected to anyone else's code—not a preacher, parent, or anyone.

—Is this commitment something that should be put into a contract?

Perhaps a prenuptial agreement on treatment? If so, keep it simple but to-the-point.

FINAL THOUGHTS: Until you are married, do not perform tasks for an RM that would make you feel used if marriage does not happen.

Why Marry?

*“If someone says Marriage is just a piece of paper’ say, ‘So is the Constitution of the United States (or the constitution of your country)’
—Ginie Sayles*

A piece of paper makes a marriage legal. Without the piece of paper, it does not matter how long you have lived together, you do not have spouse privileges financially and certainly not in a divorce. Palimony lawsuits brought by live-in lovers who were jilted have proven that marriage is the only legal ground you have.

If someone Rich wants to live with you continuously without marriage, have a legal document drawn up that protects and provides for you in the event the relationship ends. Your time is

worth money.

You put a lot more time, energy and effort into a relationship than you do in most jobs; and yet, you would never put serious time, energy and effort into a job without financial compensation!

And that is the argument you will give if necessary in order to have a legal document of financial protection for you.

Now, if you discard this notion, you absolutely **MUST** accumulate as much in cash (that you secretly stash in a separate bank account) and gifts of fine jewelry that you stash in a bank safety deposit box. You really must protect yourself.

No one really cares if you are married to someone or not, anymore; but

you have greater legal and social clout as spouse than as live-in. You are able to make decisions on behalf of both of you. True, the RM's friends will probably treat you wonderfully; but when you are married, there is a difference in social status. Everyone knows it is really not temporary and that you are not just being taken advantage of or taken for granted.

Too, if your RM is seriously ill or injured and in intensive care in the hospital, you cannot visit or authorize important medical matters for your RM who may be unconscious unless you have the legal status of spouse. If your RM has relatives, those people will make all the legal decisions affecting your RM (if the RM cannot) and those

decisions can affect you.

Knowing Your Value

At the end of every month, you take home a “paycheck.”

But do you know what your paycheck really is? Your paycheck is a “tangible measurement” of how much your employer values you—and a measurement of how much work you give on the job.

Oh believe, me, my friend, anytime you are in a relationship, you give infinitely more than you will ever give on any job. And yet, if you get into a relationship today and it ends two years from now, what will you have to

show for all that you gave in it?

You will be two years older. You do not need to be two years behind. And most people, when a relationship ends before they are ready for it to end, become bitter, thinking that the other person never really loved them, at all, and that they were “used.” And the time was “wasted.”

But if you have a divorce decree that shows the RM once cared enough for you to marry you; or if you have “tangible assets” from the relationship, then, even if you are grieved that it is over, your tangible assets are “proof” that your RM once loved you—and truly loved you.

All relationships end—either in

death or divorce or going separate ways —but the love that once existed was real and you were never used if you make sure you were valued for that time and that you have something to show for it. You **MUST** place a value on yourself that has “tangible measurements.”

Mid-Life Women And Possible Egg Harvesting

One possibility for a woman approaching forty who has never had children and wants to have her own children is to have her eggs harvested and frozen. If this is you, the sooner you can do this, the healthier your eggs will be.

If you enter menopause during the time you are having fun dating RMs, your actual marriage may not coincide with your biological clock and you may end up unable to have children without radical (and dangerous, cancer-causing) hormone shots.

The late Elizabeth Edwards, who was married to Presidential contender, John Edwards, lost one of their sons to an accident. In her grief, she turned to fertility treatments of hormones in order to have more children to replace this loss.

It worked, but as with so many women who opt for fertility hormones after menopause, she later suffered breast cancer, which eventually killed

her. Whereas fertility clinics may downplay the possibility of cancer, make no mistake that additional hormones may be a threat to your life.

But if you have harvested and preserved your eggs, you will have the 'choice' to have your own children, although a surrogate may carry them to term, if you wish.

To Marry Faster, Date As Many People As Possible

People marry faster if they do not pin all their hopes on one RM. The more you date, the sooner you marry. The more RMs you date, the greater your chances of marrying one of them. The

more you keep your date life full, the more desirable you are to an RM—male or female—and if you openly or secretly continue to see other RMs until the day you are married, you are likely to marry sooner.

Marriage is not a perfect answer; but marriage is still the best legal answer.

50

*Sex, Love, and
Money
- The Dynamics Of
Marriage -*

*“Strategy may be the final key
that ties
together Sex, Love, and*

Money into Marriage.”

—Ginie Sayles

Sex, love, and money are the dynamics of any marriage relationship. Sex, love, and money are one and the same dynamic—the dynamic of ‘Self.’

And what is ‘Self?’ Self is “all that you are.” Relationships are experience through a physical plane, an emotional plane, and a material plane. So with sex, love, and money, that means:

One: Sex is the expression of All that you are on the Physical Plane.
Two: Love is the expression of All that you are on the Emotional Plane.
Three: Money is the expression of All that you are on the Material Plane.

These are the three ways you express yourself in a relationship.

Marriages of poor people and marriages of middle-income people contain the same conflicts over sex, love, and money as marriages of the Rich. They just take place on a different financial level where there's more to

fight over.

Why do the Rich seem to have more Richness of self—that dynamic of sex, love, and money? Because the Rich can express their give and take of "self" in sex and love through lavish, romantic settings, and with unique grandeur of expression that only money can provide. The Rich can afford to give the best of themselves and to experience the best for themselves.

So, in marriage to the Rich, understanding sex, love, and money dynamics becomes especially potent!

If you are both on the same emotional page where marriage is concerned—great! No problem!—as long as marriage happens fairly quickly

in the relationship.

But, if everything drags on and seems to be on a hesitant track, STRATEGY may be the key to marital bliss and personal happiness for both of you. Most RMs want to marry but some of them may need a little ‘strategic encouragement.’

51

Marriage Strategy

1

Romantic Test Trip

*“A get-away trip can be the
‘turning point’
in a relationship.”*

—Ginie Sayles

About two months after you begin having sex together, suggest a trip together if the RM does not suggest it first. This trip should not be a business trip but one entirely for pleasure. And it should provide at least three days together.

A trip that is burdened with business demands for you or for the RM does not provide the total focus on each other that deepens a relationship. You become incidental to a business trip. You become a nice diversion, someone to talk to, a respite from the hollowness

of traveling alone.

That is not the stuff real relationships are built on.

Yes, a few business trips together may be part of the beginning of your relationship with an RM; but, at some point, a trip for pleasure just for the two of you signals a deeper, sincere interest, a better potential of something real developing.

Marriage Strategy

2

Live Together

“A person can be ‘Too Available’ to be Desirable.’

Living together should have a time-frame for marriage.”

—*Ginie Sayles*

If the trip brings you BOTH closer to each other, suggest living together for a short time.

Do this only if you know that your RM lived with someone in the past and they later married.

On the other hand, if your RM simply has a history of living with people but not marrying them; but the RM did marry someone the RM did not live with, give it a lot of thought before deciding to.

If either of you have children living with you, you may not want to do this, depending on your personal view about it.

Do not suggest living together if your preliminary questioning of your RM indicates your RM has an aversion to living together before marriage.

If you opt to live together, specify that you would like to live together three months to see how compatible you are before getting married. There. That introduces the subject nicely. Judge the reaction.

And be sure to suggest a time frame. It is best not to live together past six months to one year. It seems there is less chance of a marriage being

successful the longer people live together BEFORE their marriage to each other.

Certainly, there are exceptions, but three months of living together is really the best.

The glow is high which makes marriage more likely.

If your RM agrees to live with you on those terms, all talk should be positive and glowing toward getting married.

One of the biggest mistakes you can make, though, is to become TOO reliable to anyone.

In a Turner Classic Movie from 1960, *Strangers When We Meet*, starring Kirk Douglas and Kim

Novak, one of the characters said (in paraphrase) when you have been married (or living together) for awhile, you become part of the furniture in the house—not noticeable.

I think that nails it, perfectly.

FACT: A woman or man can become ‘too available’ to be desirable. That is why it is important to live together only long enough to intensify the relationship toward marriage.

If your RM has no hang-ups about living together before marriage and

agrees to live with you, then your RM is desiring a closer relationship with you, too.

If your RM has no hang-ups about living together but declines to live with you, then you are probably not going to marry that RM.

Yes, it could happen. For the time being, though, and for your own sake and not to try to get him, put him on the back burner and get busy developing other relationships even if you do not want to. See more and more of other RMs and less and less of this one.

Taper the sexual relationship and begin looking for another RM.

Marriage Strategy

3

*Isolate Your
Relationship*

“Your relationship is no one else’s business—if you are smart enough to keep it that

way. No trespassing, no poaching.”

—Ginie Sayles

Whether or not you and your RM live together first, spend most of your time alone together, just the two of you. You might OCCASIONALLY meet a dating couple or happily married couple for some event, but it is best not to get involved on a regular basis with each other's friends. Large group parties are the exception.

I know this sounds radical, but I even suggest you avoid meeting each other's parents, children, best friends, bosses, or co-workers until AFTER you are married.

Marriage is between TWO people. There are those who will tell you that you marry each other's family and friends. That is not true unless you LET IT be true.

Even close relatives are outsiders. Your parents are outsiders. Your children are outsiders...unless you are foolish enough to let them become involved.

They cannot always see what you see in someone—and they may secretly fear losing their influence over you even

if they sound as if they are only concerned for your good.

Their opinions could end the chances of marriage for you—a marriage that could be your greatest source of strength and happiness in the long run.

Listen, this is your life and no one knows more about your needs and your good than you.

The stirring truth is that:

—Children grow up and lead their own lives.

—Parents grow old and die.

—Friends move away.

No. Do not involve any of them in your romantic life. Once you are married, their friends, parents, and children will have to accept you as the RM's spouse. And if they do not accept you, they hurt themselves because you and your RM will have to limit your time with them.

If necessary, after you are married and if there is resentment on their part, have your RM firmly explain to them that their behavior is not acceptable and that if they want to be included they do not have to like you but they must behave respectfully and without resentment.

You are the RM's present and future and if they want to be a happy part

of the RM's life, they will be smart enough to be welcoming and generous toward you. The same is true of your children, parents, and friends toward your RM.

Try to live in another city; but if that is impossible, try to move to an area of town that is far enough away that your marriage is not under their noses.

Remember this, the RM's marriage to you is none of their business. They think it is because they were in the RM's life before you were; but they are wrong.

Marriage Strategy

4

Competition

“I’m bad and I like it”

—*Ginie Sayles*

FACT: A woman is never more desirable to a man than when another man wants her. There is an old saying “the boys all want who all the boys want.” Jealousy draws a line in the sand.

Turn The Tables: You are not sure how you feel about marrying her/him. You are sure you want to marry but just not sure if you want to marry the RM. A little insecurity can stimulate your RM's thoughts on the subject of nailing you down with marriage.

Fun: Having fun, yourself, is one secret key to getting married, especially to an RM. More good things happen when you make life fun for yourself as

you pursue meeting RMs.

Also, never appear as if you are zeroing in on marriage (although you are). Instead, enjoy (or seem to enjoy) dating and having fun dating. The key is to date several RMs at once so that one of them wants your commitment...which you only give in marriage.

Stay In The Loop: I think it is wise never to stop meeting, cultivating, and dating other RMs until the day you are actually married, whether you live together or not.

If you are living together but not married and you want to marry, then anyone else you see must be done secretly. Until you are actually married,

it is foolish to burn bridges.

Naturally, for your sexual safety, you do not have to sleep with anyone you don't want to—and if you do, just keep safer sex practices at the top of your priorities.

Anyone Can Take You To

Lunch: Stay in touch with your casual relationships by text, phone, and definitely for lunch. It is better to keep the lines open with other RMs than to try to go out and start all over re-meeting RMs after a relationship with one has ended.

Besides, you are more attractive to other RMs when you are in the middle of a relationship with another one than

you are to them when you are trying to get over one.

Do Not Psychologically Pre-

Marry An RM: If your RM wants you to stop dating other people, state clearly that you will not do that until you decide to marry because that is what marriage means, committing to one person.

Sometimes that comment alone can generate a marriage proposal.

An RM must eventually know he or she must earn your commitment through marriage. If you psychologically pre-marry an RM that person has less incentive to nail it down legally in marriage.

55

Marriage Strategy

5

Propose

“Have an attitude that assumes your RM wants to marry you. Never question the RM’s love. Don’t put it ‘out

there. ’’
—*Ginie Sayles*

It is very important in your manner with your RM, to have an attitude that ASSUMES you and your RM WILL marry. Do not act as if you are afraid your RM won't marry you.

Once you and your RM begin living together, begin buying things jointly, investing jointly.

Get your RM to let you use his or her credit cards or by giving you some in

your own name that are billed to him.

If you are a woman, eventually get the RM to let you use his name. These are good legal tools if your RM should ever try to take advantage of you or not to do right by you.

During moments of uncertainty your RM may have about your relationship, YOU take control of it, saying, cheerfully, "I am not worried about us. You are mine and I know it. You are all mine."

Then turn the subject away as if you are truly unconcerned with losing him. Confident possessiveness is reassuring. It may take some practice, but it'll be worth it.

One of the most common mistakes

made is to pretend not to want a relationship. If you want to be refreshingly different, be enthusiastic about love. If you have been married before, say you liked married life in general. But do not hint. If someone points out that if you enjoyed it, why are you divorced, say, “There are many things I enjoy but sometimes more with someone else over another. That is how life is.”

Say openly, happily, that relationships are healthy and you like being involved, you like it when you are in love.

Say you are glad to be normal and healthy and to enjoy something as natural as eventually getting married and

creating a home with someone you love.

Instantly create a small challenge by adding that your only problem is that getting you to commit is a task cut out for someone special!

Once your RM says he or she loves you, NEVER complain that the RM does not love you (even if you have moments of feeling that way). NEVER put the doubt in your RM's mind. One RM said a woman he fell in love with kept accusing him of not really loving her and one day she convinced him it must be true.

Do not ever criticize the relationship the two of you have together. Reinforce positives and happiness together. Tell your RM some

compliments someone gave you about the two of you together as a couple. Another time, tell your RM compliments someone gave you about your effect on your RM's life.

And stay expensive. Ask for expensive items you see as if you expect them. Get money into you to increase your value to the RM more and more.

TACTICS

Confident Approaches

One: Announce that you and your RM had better get started looking for a house if you are going to get married before the Christmas rush.

Some men and women have had

success naming holiday periods for marriage because holidays revolve around home, family. That is why single people find themselves often feeling lonelier and depressed during holidays. Especially between Thanksgiving and Christmas.

Your RM may be more susceptible during that time because marriage seems warm, cozy and comforting during those times. Weddings seem part of the celebration spirit and exchanging rings part of gift-giving, exchanging vows, part of the spiritual momentum and sentimentality of the season.

Two: Or you can announce that

you and your RM had better go ahead and file for your marriage license if you are planning to get married by a certain month, which is only 3 weeks to 2 months away.

If your RM is surprised, you respond by looking surprised at the RM, saying, "Well, it was your idea. You are the one who said we should get married in May."

If the RM denies it, insist that the RM is the one who wanted to get married in May. Add that actually, you had wanted to marry in early June, but the RM had been adamant about May.

If you want to, you can say the RM brought the subject up on an occasion when the RM had been

drinking, but I think that is a weaker position.

Tease your RM about having amnesia. Do not get heavy. Stay cheerful and see what happens.

If you choose this method, always insist it was the RM's idea. Your RM should eventually believe you — seriously!

At least the subject has been introduced and you can gradually ingrain the idea into your RM a few days at a time and in a NON-PUSHY, unworried manner. (NEVER confess)

Three: You can engineer a "yes" from your RM for marriage if you use a series of questions that automatically

give the logical response of "yes."

For instance: "Don't you think that if two people are sexually responsible and care about each other, that they should make love?"

Your RM answers, "Yes."

You continue, "And don't you think that for the sake of sexual safety that they should make a commitment of monogamy?" Your RM answers, "Yes."

You close with, "Then, if they find themselves growing closer, do not you think it is natural and probably that they get married?" If your RM says anything other than "Yes;" if he says, "Not necessarily..." then you may want to re-evaluate what you expect from the relationship.

You can always be more forthright by taking your RM out for a special occasion or to a clever setting and propose in a cute, adorable way. Do this if you believe your RM really cares for you and only if you are willing to risk a "no" response.

Less Confident Approach That Can Work

Once closeness and happiness are established through living together, if there has been no mention of marriage, then stage a "think-it-over" withdrawal.

Do not stage a think-it-over withdrawal until you know without a shadow of a doubt that you can keep

yourself from giving in to gnawing insecurity, doubt, and raging fear. Then you are subject to making up an excuse to yourself and to him for calling or showing up or writing a letter.

Once you supposedly withdraw with a sense of independence and then give in to self-doubt, you will then be operating out of weakness and your RM will not take any future “withdrawals” seriously.

Marriage Strategy

6

Deadline

*“Even life has a deadline.
Relationships need a
deadline, too, for marriage.”*

—Ginie Sayles

Deadlines have gotten a lot of people married, including RMs. A deadline does not have to be a verbal ultimatum. A deadline is a time limit that helps an RM to realize she or he does not want to lose you.

For example, a divorced woman in her early forties worked for Neiman-Marcus and met a Super Rich man in his fifties who was also divorced.

They dated steadily for a year; but he never brought up marriage and when she made subtle hints, he changed the

subject, clearly not wanting to discuss it.

At the end of the year of dating, she was frustrated with her intense love for him in a relationship that was going nowhere. She knew, instinctively, that he was not a person she could bully with an ultimatum.

So she came up with another ultimatum—an ultimatum of time. She placed a request for a transfer to another Neiman-Marcus in another state. When she received the transfer notice, she told her elegant RM that she would be moving to the new state in thirty days.

He said nothing about it other than to say what a nice state she would be moving to and how nice the store would be.

Devastated by his reaction, she continued seeing him that month and finally after she was packed, they had their ‘last date’ the night before her move. Over their romantic dinner, she told him she had to be home early.

As the RM walked her to her apartment door, she was afraid she would break down in tears when he suddenly pulled her to him and said, “Do you really think I am going to let you go away? No. I want you marry me, instead.”

What a fantastic use of an ultimatum without ever saying it is an ultimatum—just a deadline of time. Fantastic!!!

Try to find a NON-VERBAL ultimatum of a time restraint. It may not work, but it is worth a try.

If, however, during the year together, there has been resistance to getting married, you can only issue a verbal ultimatum, if you want to; but ONLY if you stick with it.

You will be glad later that you did, even if it does not end in marriage. Besides, you have been wise enough to still have other RMs waiting in the wings, haven't you?

57

Marriage Strategy

7

Pregnancy

*“I’m still bad and I like it
even better!”*

—Ginie Sayles

If all else fails... Yes, I may catch hell for even mentioning this; but pregnancy is one of the oldest methods of getting married! I am NOT advocating it; just stating a reality.

If the RM—male or female—will not marry you; your child will likely have legal financial rights and you may or may not benefit.

Pregnancy can work for men as well as for women. A man can get a female RM pregnant; or if she think he is protected, well then...oops!

Male or female, if you have a child by an RM and can prove it with

DNA, you may have the court's support for financial provision for you and the baby. However, it is best if it appears not to be 'entrapment,' just a wonderful accident of love.

And whether you are male or female, there are some facts to consider:

Be sure you want and would love a child of this relationship, whether married or not.

Do study up and be sure of all your legal rights for financial provision for a child and for you whether married or not before you jump into this.

Make up your mind that if you and your baby benefit financially and that if this relationship ends and the RM marries someone else; that you will be gracious about it and not vindictive. **Be sure** you can do this!

First and foremost is the child. I am assuming that if you want a particular RM this badly, that you will love a child from your relationship with her/him.

If you are a man and if she tells you she is pregnant, smile and suggest flying to Vegas and getting married. If she wants an abortion, try to talk her out of it. If she insists, don't say anything,

just secretly locate a top-notch attorney and, as the child's father, have her served to prevent the abortion.

Personally, I think this is a horrible thing for anyone to do to any woman; but I mention it only as a father's legal right.

Whether you are a male or female, be careful with the choice of pregnancy in the climate of our society today.

It might not work and then you could be making some tough decisions about abortion/adoption, single parenthood, or paternity suits! NOT your ideal position to be in.

But...as long as you really, really, really want the RM's child and will love

it and cherish it and be good to the child no matter what happens between you and the RM, this may be an option.

Pregnancy is one of the oldest marriage proposals ever!

Marriage Strategy

8

Marry Secretly

*“The Secret to Success is the
word ‘Secret.’”*

—Ginie Sayles

If you and your RM have gotten this far, you will most likely get married and it will be a happy, romantic experience for both of you.

When you have successfully handled trouble in RM City and engineered a yes out of your RM, or your RM has proposed to you, make an agreement that the number one priority between the two of you from now on will be your marriage to each other.

Once your RM agrees to that, take your marriage plans from the talk stage to the legal reality stage the very next day—blood test or marriage license,

according to the requirements of your state.

Do not seem desperate or overly hurried in your manner; just come up with a reason – such as your schedule – that makes it efficient to go ahead and get little things out of the way now.

If your RM protests the rush, point out that you have both agreed that your marriage to each other is the number one priority to both of you and that this is proof that it is.

Do not Announce Anything To Anyone

Whatever month you suggest for

marriage, be sure it is not more than two months away, preferably sooner.

Beautiful weddings can be planned spontaneously within days and no one has time to get cold feet or interference from others.

Long, drawn-out affairs can terrify a male RM out of the whole thing. Sudden excitement is more romantic. If the RM wants a small, quiet wedding, do it! You can always have elaborate anniversary parties. It is more important to make it special for the two of you than for a lot of other people!

You will impress others with the fact that you actually married the RM, not with a wedding, if there has to be a choice.

Keep Isolating Your Relationship

Plus—if you move straight into marriage without mentioning it to other people beforehand, you may be lucky enough to get your RM to the altar before anyone has time to think of (or to be reminded of) a Prenuptial Agreement.

An RM who would be inclined to have a Prenuptial Agreement probably will think of it, but...maybe not.

Pre/Post Nuptial Agreements

*“Pre or Post Nuptial
Agreements are only as good
or as bad as the people
making them .Get a lawyer, in
either case!”*

—Ginie Sayles

Even a Will is created because death is considered inevitable. The same feeling can surround creating a Prenuptial Agreement.

However, there are people who have lasting marriages built around a Prenuptial Agreement.

As I mentioned earlier, some individuals tied to a Prenuptial Agreement with an RM tolerate or create appealing sexual practices that others of us would find uncomfortable.

But do not be afraid of the words.

Prenuptial Agreements are only as good or as bad as the person who makes them. The situation may justify it. Exorbitant prior debts or other difficulties of one spouse that would be unfair to thrust on the new, loving spouse.

No matter what state you live in, Prenuptial Agreements are legal. The Court in your state can rule on those that are contested. And if you have no Prenuptial Agreement, your marriage is subject to the laws of your state.

A Prenuptial Agreement may be challenged on charges of:

Duress. Your RM gives you a Prenuptial Agreement to sign while

wedding guests are listening to O Promise Me while waiting for you and the groom to arrive at the altar.

Unfairness Clearly, one person is getting disproportionately more than the other.

Misrepresentation. One mate did not fully reveal assets and financial position.

Fraud. An attempt to defraud the other.

What To Do

If by the day of your wedding you

have not been presented with a Prenuptial Agreement, do not take anything for granted.

In my Marry Rich Seminars, I jokingly say "Invite a good contract attorney to be your guest at the wedding...just in case you have to ask 'is there a lawyer in the house?'"

The truth is, I am serious. Do it.

There is no substitute for having a lawyer represent you if you are presented with a Prenuptial Agreement.

If You Are Confronted With A Prenuptial Agreement

If your RM presents you with a Prenuptial Agreement well in advance, then tell your RM that since it was drawn up by the RM's lawyer, you would like the RM to pay the fees for an attorney of your choice to look at it.

Do not reveal the name of the attorney you choose. Just say that you haven't decided on your attorney yet but that you will let the RM know how much to deposit in your account after you have located one and gotten estimates of cost. And DO get advance prices from your attorney and DO be sure your RM deposits that amount in YOUR bank account.

You do not want your RM to pay your attorney directly. That would create

a conflict of interest and your attorney would be working for your RM and not you.

If your RM will not pay your legal fees and if you cannot afford an attorney, telephone your county, borough, or parish and find out where free legal aid is provided.

Law schools usually have intern programs for students who are close to graduating from law school. Telephone to see if you qualify for help. You must have some assistance in the matter.

If an RM is not going to pay for you to have legal assistance, chances are you are getting into a really bad deal.

The Underlying

Psychology Of A Prenuptial Agreement

Know the underlying psychology of a Prenuptial Agreement.

Most people talk in noble terms of fairness. Rarely is that the motive for a Prenuptial Agreement. Control, selfishness, fear, sometimes even cruelty may be hidden in the talk of fairness.

In the case of duress, when you are presented the prenuptial agreement at the time of taking your marriage vows, an RM is using embarrassment as a weapon against you to force you, to manipulate you to agree to the RM's terms.

It is easy to see that an RM who

puts you into this situation or who insists on an unfair Prenuptial Agreement is attempting to create a parent-child dependency in the relationship.

There may be a deep-seated fear within the RM that the only way to keep you is to control the purse strings.

That may sound flattering at the outset, but it is really a persecutor/victim relationship.

Helplessness is not attractive and I doubt you will keep your RM's interest very long with such an arrangement.

You will be taking your chances by signing an Agreement you do not truly agree with, but, hopefully, if your marriage collapses, the court will consider it signed under duress.

Rather than leave yourself unprotected in this situation, if you go through with the marriage, at least research the countries that have secret bank accounts. Begin socking away whatever cash you can charm your RM into giving you during the early ‘in love’ months, so that you never tolerate abuse or fear.

As I understand it, the RM is already paying taxes on this money, so you are not hiding anything from the government, just from your exploitative RM—to protect yourself!

Be aware of the fact that the RM took advantage of you during your glow of desire to get married, by slipping you an unfair document.

Now, you must take advantage of the RM during the afterglow of marriage itself, which exists during the first 18 months of marriage.

Discreetly find out from your new set of Rich friends who the best attorneys are who handle Prenuptial Agreements and visit that attorney when the time comes. And in those cases, it most likely will come.

Ways To Handle The Subject Of Prenuptial Agreements

The only 'fair' Prenuptial

Agreements take into account the value of your time that you spend married to the RM and the value of you as a person. At least have your attorney go for the following in a prenuptial agreement:

- Collateralize the RMs Agreed Amount If There Is A Divorce
- Insist On Divorce Insurance
- Have an Item in the Prenuptial Agreement that Amounts increase by a certain percentage with time
- Have an Item that a Post Nuptial Agreement can Never be presented

Let's examine each of the above items:

Collateralize Your Promised Income From A Prenuptial Agreement

The best way to protect yourself is to insist that whatever amount the RM agrees in the prenuptial agreement that you will receive if the marriage ends is “collateralized.”

Seriously. A man who married a wealthy woman was promised in their prenuptial agreement that if they divorced after ten years of marriage that he would receive three million dollars. That may not sound like a lot of money, but it is better than many spouses receive in a divorce and he was willing to

accept it.

However, after fourteen years of marriage, when he found himself alone and lonely most of the time because she was spending all her time with a young lover (one of several he had tolerated), he was ready for a divorce.

Unfortunately, her money was tied up in business debts and untouchable financial instruments so he would have to leave the marriage with nothing.

If, however, three million dollars had been put in collateral at the time of signing the prenuptial agreement fourteen years earlier, the money would have been there for him.

His wife, aware of his divorce inquiries, went ahead and divorced him,

knowing it was a most advantageous time to cut her losses with no financial losses.

Divorce Insurance

Even if statistical probability indicates your marriage will last a lifetime; remember that if your RM wants a Prenuptial Agreement without collateralizing a settlement; then have the purchase of Divorce Insurance for your protection written into the Prenuptial Agreement, which may be your best bet.

The New York Times quoted John A. Logan, chief executive officer of SafeGuard Guaranty, as saying, “There is nothing to stop your spouse from

raiding those investments and taking it all. And then with all the money gone, you're left with all the legal bills..."

In my opinion, this is even more likely if an RM refuses to collateralize a settlement for you for a Prenuptial Agreement.

Post Nuptial Agreements

A dear friend of ours fell in love with a girl when they were in high school and she with him. However, they were separated when each went off to college, met other people and married.

Years later, after he was

divorced, she contacted him, even though she was still married. They met, realized they were still in love and they began seeing each other.

Unfortunately, she was tied to a prenuptial agreement that expired after five years, when she had to sign a post nuptial agreement for another five years or lose everything, including her children and that if she sued, she would automatically lose everything, including her children.

Her husband was never mean to her in any other ways, but the post nuptial agreement reassured his ego that she was tied to him. Still, once she signed it, her life with him was that of a sought-after socialite. She wore fine

clothes, drove luxury cars, attended the most prestigious events, and loved the family life she and her husband enjoyed with their children.

For ten years, our friend and his true love tried to find ways that she could get around the terms of or the renewal of the post nuptial agreement, but, in the end, she chose her family life over our friend. He was devastated but knew that he could never offer her what her husband offered.

Self-Esteem And Prenuptial Agreements

If, however you work, constantly, on your self-esteem through positive self-reprogramming statements,

visualization, accepting responsibility for your life, and creating the life you desire by taking risks, I do not believe you will ever find yourself faced with an unhappy Prenuptial Agreement. The very Richness of your being will overflow into the life around you and pull to you only the best.

And even if you were presented with one, your self-esteem would be so high that you could make demands in your own behalf and if they were not received, you could walk away from it without batting an eye.

*Reasons Not To
Marry
The Rich*

“Marriage should be the warm, cozy, soft pillow of your life where you can safely rest your head.”

—*Ginie Sayles*

The purpose of my book is to provide information that gives you a choice to marry an RM—and if you do not marry the Rich, it is not because you do not qualify or do not know how – but because it is your choice.

You may decide that even though you now qualify as marriageable for a Rich Mate, there may be equally as important reasons not to marry someone Rich.

There are ten major reasons you

may be reluctant to marry an RM. Five of those reasons

I consider to be excellent reasons not to marry Rich; whereas five of them I consider less significant, but important only if they are important to you.

Reason Number 1: Physical Abuse/Fear

Violence Is NEVER Negotiable.

Abusers blame you for their abuse of you. “It’s your fault!” they claim and point out what you did to provoke them. NOT TRUE, my dear friend. Whatever you did, **their reaction is their**

responsibility, not yours, period!

And abuse always, always accelerates. I know you live in hope that it will stop or they will change and be good to you or that you will not cause them to hurt you – but you did not cause them to hurt you – **you did not!** That is what they want you to believe in order to justify their behavior. That is what they want you to believe because if you believe it, then that gives them permission to do it again.

There is only one reaction you can ever have to physical violence—get out immediately, and be proud of yourself for getting out—and never, never, never have anything else to do with the RM!

I don't care how much you may

need money, stay away! Do not talk to the person again, ever. Move to another town if you have to, but leave.

Your number one job in life is to protect the little baby that YOU were born into being. Your birth gave you the job of protecting your life, not living it for others, and not justifying the mistreatment of others, whether it is based on misplaced judgment, love, or religion.

No amount of money is worth abuse.

Certainly, you will never find marriage to the Rich worthwhile if you must tolerate abuse or abase yourself in order to maintain the marriage.

I must add at this point, there are

individuals who, after a divorce, made money writing a book about it or selling movie rights about the physical or mental or emotional abuse they endured in their Rich marriage.

Tattletale fame is nothing new.

Reason Number 2: Financial Abuse/Manipulation

If the RM does not hit you or belittle you; but withholds money from you, or gives you a pittance (i.e. \$1000 or less per month allowance from a Rich mate) to cover your expenses in the

relationship, it is a form of financial abuse.

Many wealthy women and men may not give carte blanche to you because they have to protect their assets; but if there is going to be ‘an allowance’ it should be fair.

A wealthy woman gave her husband \$7,000 a month. She bought him a car and she provided his clothes, their residence and living expenses; but he paid upkeep on his car and any incidentals he wanted, such as a watch.

One wealthy man gave his wife \$10,000 a month allowance for spending money, although he covered all their living expenses, paid her charge accounts where she bought clothes, had

spa treatments, et cetera, and he paid for any new cars she bought and the upkeep for the cars. Basically, she was able to stash quite a bit away in her own savings account—which was a great help when they eventually got a divorce.

This same RM also gave his mistress \$10,000 a month and handled her living expenses, too, the same as he did for his wife.

A number of RMs give their wives an allowance of \$5,000 a month spending money while covering all living expenses.

All of these are reasonable, depending on how Rich your RM is and the rise or fall of the cost of living and/or the rise and fall of your RM's

financial situation.

And there are a few RMs who share bank accounts, savings, credit cards and such, as well. They are a vanishing breed but they do exist.

You will have a ‘sane’ relationship as long as money you receive is generous and not rammed down your throat with constant reminders or used as a threat of withdrawal unless you do certain things to please the RM (manipulation), and a ‘sane’ relationship – which is the only kind you want.

Financial abuse is as abusive as physical abuse. It bruises your psyche and damages your self-esteem. It is not worth being in a soul-less relationship

of financial abuse.

Reason Number 3: Giving Up Yourself—Is It Worth It?

In some cases, it takes no special skills to marry an RM, only a compliant willingness to do anything the RM said.

The Not-So Good Story

I am reminded of such a case, when a woman married a wealthy heir by providing an offer he could not refuse—no financial demands and total sexual

obedience—which not only created their marriage but later destroyed it.

But what is the good of being married to the Rich if, like she, you received only a \$1 thousand dollar a month allowance from a \$25 million dollar husband, had to serve cocaine at parties, and had to bring an extra woman to bed with you in order to please your husband sexually? And, finally, what is the good of it, if, in a divorce like hers, you lose your children and subject them to scandal?

RM's are no different from anyone else. If they have trouble with sexual satisfaction or being looked up to, they will marry someone who is financially and sexually an easy mark. Do you want

to be that someone who is willing to be "used" without complaint.

If marriage to an RM requires you receiving very little money available to you and obedience to the RM, I will not tell you not to marry her or him; but I will warn you that it probably will not last.

Ultimately, it is you who must decide if you are willing to endure it and if you can leverage it to your advantage. Determine for yourself if the marriage requirements will be worth it.

If there is one thing that I want for you it is that you maintain control of your happiness within the marriage relationship to the Rich—that you are an asset treated with honor. That is the way

to love the Rich and win.

You can marry an RM and use the position in positive ways to get an education, a higher degree, launch a business a talent or design, a career, or to launch a shining social reputation.

Reason Number 4: Loneliness Makes It Too Hard To Wait For An RM

No matter what age you are, listen to the winds of loneliness in your own heart. Loneliness is inevitable at times, no matter whom you want to marry. But, if loneliness becomes an overwhelming factor, it may be better to marry someone

with potential and direct your energies together for achievement.

Reason Number 5: Money Is Transitory So Why Bother?

There is the possibility that your RM can lose money. After all, there is no guarantee that an RM you marry will stay Rich. Reed and I have certainly experienced financial downturns.

If this should happen to your RM, my personal feeling is that you never abandon an RM who has defended you with his dollar and his name.

Mercenary though you are—and I

hope you are—you see the RM through the crises. Afterward, you can leave if you want to and you will be admired by other RMs who witnessed the fine caliber of your strength. This will enhance your opportunities with other RMs for marriage.

But if it bothers you that money is transitory and it can be gone very quickly, you may want to consider marriage alternatives.

Reason Number 6: It is Not Your Money

Another consideration is that even though you Marry Rich, that does not

make you Rich. You are the spouse of someone Rich. In some cases, if you are ambitious, it can help you. I, personally, am not Rich; but Rich men in my life have mentored my understanding of making money. A Rich woman or man understands your goals.

Still and all, it is not your money. So, if it bothers you to think that your mate will be the one with the money and not you, then you may want to consider marriage alternatives.

Reason Number 7: Love Is Your Hot Button

If, love is important to you, realize that love—a wonderful love—so often develops after marriage to someone who is kind and generous with you.

The Good Story Of Love 'AFTER' Marriage

My girl friend was thirty-five years old, had never married, and had suffered through four years of a love affair with a married man.

"Love" was the reason she stayed in the relationship with her married man.

During the fourth year, she was visiting friends in another town and went

to a party. There, she met a man who told her he often had business in the city where she lived and asked if he could take her to dinner the next time he was in her city on business.

She really was not interested in him; but she politely agreed because she was friends with the hostess of the party and so was he.

When he called a month later, she had to rack her brain to remember who he was. As it turned out, her married lover could not see her that night, so she went to dinner with him.

Throughout dinner, the businessman talked but she was not paying attention to anything he said. She was thinking about her married lover

and excused herself several times from the table to check her messages to see if her lover had called—but he had not.

When the businessman took her home, she graciously thanked him for dinner and a nice evening, but once inside her apartment, she never gave the out-of-town businessman a second thought.

And so it began...the businessman would call when he came to her city on business—and—if she did not have a date with her married lover—she would go to dinner with the visiting businessman. But, always, she never gave the businessman a second thought after her dates with him.

All this happened over a three month period during the fourth year of her love affair with the married man.

Tormented by love for her married man and frustrated with his promises to marry her someday—promises that he always had new reasons to postpone telling his wife—my friend could stand it no longer.

She decided to take a job in another city, in hopes of forcing her lover to his senses so he would leave his wife and marry her.

Traveling three states away, she found the job, gave notice at her current job, gave notice to her apartment, broke the news to her lover, and packed her belongings in boxes, waiting for him to

call or to come over and to plead with her not to leave.

And then...on the day she was to move out, she realized her lover was not going to insist she stay, nor was he going to leave his wife for her.

She also realized she really did not want to move; and she did not want to start a new job. Most of all, she did not want to leave the city where her lover lived, even if he would not marry her. It had been a last ditch stand that failed and she did not want to go.

So, she telephoned her new employer in the other city and told them she was not coming. After that, she telephoned her old job to say she would be coming in the next day; but they had

already replaced her. Alarmed that she had been so quickly replaced, she quickly telephoned her landlord to say she was not moving. Ah, but her apartment had already been leased. She had to vacate the premises.

Devastated by this alarming turn of events, my friend sank down on to sit on one of the packed boxes and felt serious depression settle over her.

Her telephone rang.

She jumped to answer, thinking it would be her married lover—but no, it was the boring businessman from out of town, asking to take her to dinner. Her heart sank with misery.

"Sorry," she said, "This is not a good time."

"May I come by to see you?" he asked.

"This is really not a good time," she repeated, dismally.

"I promise, I won't stay but five minutes," he insisted.

Finally, she agreed, but just for five minutes. When he arrived, he took one look at the packed boxes and asked what she was doing.

"I don't know what I am doing," she answered, sadly. "I don't have a job and I don't have a place to live. I don't know what I am going to do."

The visiting businessman brightened. "Well, the reason I wanted to see you tonight is because I thought you might like to marry me."

Shocked, she turned to look at him. Her jumbled thoughts tumbled through her mind, through her pitiful, hopeless situation. . .

On the one hand, her married lover, who was everything she ever wanted and ached with longing to marry, had not even called her.

And on the other hand, standing before her was a man who was everything she never wanted—short, stocky, not good looking—but he was asking her to marry him.

She was just about to open her mouth to say "No" when the words **"Give the guy a chance"** drifted through her mind.

Give the guy a chance...

To her own surprise, instead of saying no, she said, "Yes."

(I think that is giving him more than a 'chance'!)

The movers arrived and her new 'fiancé' had all her belongings shipped to his house in the town where he lived.

Within three weeks they were married. She could not believe her eyes when they arrived at his house. It was a three-story beautiful home on the side of a mountain with stunning views.

In the past, she had never paid much attention to what her new husband had told her about his profession. It turned out he was an officer of a major oil company.

A year later, she was driving a

new Cadillac he had given her from the country club where they were members back to their beautiful house.

Suddenly, she was overwhelmed by a sad longing to see her former lover and to talk to him again.

Unable to drive, she pulled her Cadillac to the side of the street and began sobbing.

And then, to her surprise, the memories of the past year with her kind, generous husband began flowing like a healing balm through the anguish she felt from the married lover who was too stingy with his love to be faithful to either his wife or to her; and too stingy with his money to indulge either with more than token gifts.

She stopped crying. Her thoughts swam with proof of her husband's love. His love surrounded her and clothed her. His delight in giving her gifts and his joy in her happiness filled her heart with warmth. And she realized how happy she was with him, how much she...loved...him.

"Ginie," she said, "I had fallen in love with my husband after we married. I truly love him."

Understand this: Love does not have to precede marriage. Love does grow and develop as you become attached to the kindness and consideration of a person. Love can be a choice when you choose wisely.

But, if you consider it noble to

marry for love, even if it is someone who is mean and stingy with you, then marrying for money is something you might never find satisfying anyway.

Certainly, an affair with someone mean and stingy while married to someone kind and generous is my final compromise to you. But, if you must marry the boor, then, of course, I offer you my very best condolence, er, wishes.

Hopefully, if you marry for love, it will at least be a person who is Rich in spirit with you! That is understandable!

My Answer To Advice That You Should Only

Marry For Love

People will tell you that you should “only marry for love;” however, quite often in marriages, ‘love dies’ sometimes for one person, sometimes for both.

And those same people who said you should only marry for love will say, “Oh, but you should not get divorced. You should stay married.” That is a complete contradiction.

If love is the end-all and be-all of marriage, then the marriage should end if the love ends. But the hypocrites will decry that it is marriage that is sacred and you should stick together no matter what. That means, they have suddenly

changed their definition of marriage being love-based as sacred.

If marriage itself is the sacred vow, then it can be given and lived up to in a marriage that is based on reasons other than love, such as:

Companionship – a lot of senior citizens who were married a long time and their mates have died, marry again and this time for companionship.

Loneliness – At any age, this is probably the most worthy of all reasons to marry.

Financial or Family help –

Throughout time, couples have married for mutual help in combining their children into one family and/or helping each other offset the expenses of life.

Love is wonderful; but it does not always occur in the same relationship. Not only that; but where marriage is concerned, I do not think love is the big moment. In marriage, especially over time, I believe love is a day-by-day choice.

Reason Number 8: Sex Is So-o-o Good With Mr. Poor

Sex is usually important for

marrying the Rich; however, virtually all tests that have ever been conducted indicate that sex slips in priority, after the first eighteen months of marriage—and usually ends up on a slower track over time than most couples will ever admit.

If it slips after eighteen months and you absolutely must have steamy sex; remember, it might stay steamier with a lover on the side, as long as you have a nice Porsche to ease into after lovemaking and a sweet, gentle RM spouse to welcome you home.

However, if you must, must, must have a sex machine as your lawfully, wedded, for however long it lasts—go for it!

Reason Number 9: Same Age And Background

Many people want someone who is in their same age category or who shares a similar background. There is no denying this can be attractive.

The warning here, though, especially for ambitious women, is that a man who is in your same age category and who shares your background of lacking wherewithal, may have too much in common with you.

In fact, I have found that men and women who are ambitious and who are at the same starting point on the totem

pole end up having more relationship problems than just about any other combination. This is because ambitious people need someone to nurture them in their achievements, not to compete with them.

You may each feel you can do that for each other—and sometimes you can. But sometimes, when both your careers are in a crunch of growth, you do not have it to give each other although you want to. This means neither of you is getting what is needed from the relationship at that time.

Another difficulty is that whereas you both want to see each other succeed, one of you can begin to feel a little like a failure when the other begins succeeding

more. There may be denial about this, but an insidious competition enters the relationship and tiny resentments mixed with pride for each other.

Finally, there also is the issue of no one having made it to the point of really being able to help the other constructively in separate goals. You are facing a lot of the same problems for the first time but in different careers. Of course, it can work, if you both stay aware of it, but it can be tricky.

If you marry someone who is of a different age and who has a background of wealth, you receive advice and help with perspective.

Too, the RM already has a financial identity established and will

not be in competition with you, and will normally be intrigued by helping you and watching you succeed.

Wealthy women have nurtured the careers of politicians, actors, lawyers, physicians, authors, artists and on and on. And the same is true of wealthy men nurturing women's careers.

61

*Settle For Less To
Get More*

**- RM's-in-the-
Making Are Worth
A Second Look -**

“If an RM gives money to

*charity; but little or no money
to you, the RM does not love
you, period!”*
—*Ginie Sayles*

People may tell you never to
settle for less than what you want—
Foolish advice!

All major businesses and
successful business people know the art
of negotiating compromise in business
deals—that is how business is done!!

Business people come together

with their own agendas and soon seek a way for each to give up on some of their goals in order to make the most important goals happen.

Why? Because when they examine their needs in the deal, they realize that settling for less here and there will end up giving them MORE than what they have if the deal does not happen.

This must be true for relationships and fulfillment in life. When it comes to relationships, no matter what age you are, listen to the hollow winds of loneliness in your own heart.

Loneliness is inevitable at times, no matter whom you want to marry. But, if loneliness becomes an overwhelming factor, it may be better to marry someone

with potential and then to direct your energies together for achievement.

How Much Time Should It Take To Marry An RM?

It should not take longer than three years to find an RM to marry and to marry the RM—and usually much faster than that. My suggestion to you is to incorporate Marry Rich into your life for no longer than that length of time.

Why? Because some people starve themselves emotionally by setting exorbitant standards (criteria) for an RM that keep them constantly eliminating

someone who can work out perfectly for them. These individuals spend years in the search and do not allow themselves to enjoy a fulfilling relationship in the Now.

That is why I urge you to keep your criteria loose and easy and attainable—and to limit yourself to a maximum of three years in pursuit of this goal.

Now, if you are in your twenties and you have a lot of success with RMs, you can extend the time; and for a man of any age, this pursuit can work if your criteria are realistic.

But if you are a woman over thirty-five, have no children, and want to have children; limit yourself to three

years in pursuit of this goal and, frankly, if you want to limit seeking an RM for marriage to one good year, that is fine, too. Why? Because if you want to have children, your biological clock is real and it is ticking.

If relationships with RMs are tenuous at best; you may want to consider women and men who are on track to become Rich Mates in the future. These RMs-in-the-Making may be more immediately marriageable.

Even Forbes.com lists Billionaires in the Making and the Top 10 Women in Money. There are many categories of rising wealth from tech moguls-to-be as well as up and coming hedge-fund managers, to athletes and

entertainers. And if they are going to make it, it will usually be within 3 to 5 years from the time they seriously began in earnest.

So let's re-evaluate your goals to marry an RM. If, after three years of steadfastly pursuing your Marry Rich goals, I suggest you take honest inventory of your life.

Are you still ending up with
Saccharin Daddies or Mamas?

Are there any real Sugar D's or
Sugar M's with true marriage
possibilities on the horizon? If so,
how realistically on the horizon
and how soon on the horizon?

Are you using Marry Rich goals as a means of avoiding relationships with real marriage potential; yet you are not any closer to a real relationship with an RM?

Are you hooked on a specific RM and nothing is moving any closer to marriage than it was two years ago?

Marriage to the Rich is intended as personal fulfillment for yourself. However, if marriage to the Rich has become a pursuit that keeps you postponing fulfillment then it is no longer a healthy goal.

You will know if that is the case if you find that you are still involved with unsatisfying RMs, or RMs with no marriage potential. At that point, consider marrying a mate with Rich potential instead, and you may still achieve your goal and experience personal fulfillment in the meantime.

For Both Men And Women: Your Life Inventory

How old are you?

Have you ever been married before?

Do you have children?

Do you want to have children?

Is the loneliness starting to scare

you?

Men: You have achievements to consider and if, after 3 – 5 years, an RM is not realistically on the horizon to help you; then go ahead and get a solid family base in place with someone available as a support-system.

For Both Men And Women:

"Future RMs"

If you do widen your scope to include Future RMs, then look for someone who has earning potential or who has been rich before or who is

almost rich.

It could just be that you are the missing "Success Factor" to transform this person's life from "almost" to "actuality"!

Look for the following types who may make your life emotionally Richer in the now and financially Richer in the future.

Mr./Ms. Not Quite Rich

This can be a good choice because the person has had enough drive and personal achievement to make significant success happen in his/her life.

Be sure the person is not too, too self-satisfied about his/her achievements in life and is content or resistant to higher levels of money goals.

Mr./Ms. Has-Been Rich

Potential has been tried and true here. This is a person who either has connections—if the money lost was inherited; or the person knows how to make the money again—if the money lost was earned.

When you consider a Has-Been Rich for marriage, determine if the person lost money due to reasons of the economy or due to personal weaknesses that sabotaged his/her success.

If it is a matter of the economy, this person has all the potential in the world to remake a fortune. It was not his/her fault in full.

Another benefit of marrying a Has-Been Rich is if you are very ambitious for your own creative projects or business ventures, the Has-Been Rich may very well be looking for a new direction to translate his/her business experience and acumen into. This means you will benefit from tremendous previous but proven success patterns of your partner.

If the person has self-sabotaged, there is still hope as long as you take sufficient steps to protect yourself and

your business from it. This person is a wealth of information and connections that can help you succeed.

Mr./Ms. Potential

Everyone always plans to be Rich one day so to determine if it is a ‘real’ possibility, answer the following questions about a person who ‘plans’ to be Rich.

1. How often does the person switch his/her goal as to what the person wants to achieve?

Most people with potential are fairly single minded. They do not think

they want to be a lawyer one day and a doctor the next. Yes, they may change their minds or direction, but it is not a fluctuating state of mind.

2. Does the person have any credits of achievement? Has the person followed through on any goal?

Passion for a particular path in life is usually a good indicator, proven by passionate work ethic in that path.

3. What is the person doing NOW toward achieving his/her "be rich" goal?

In other words, if she says she's going to make a fortune as a rock star, but she cannot carry a tune and isn't even

taking singing lessons, I think you might want to consider the disparity of WHEN she plans to begin becoming a rich rock star.

Alternatives. There, that gives you some alternatives to cold-blooded, blood-thirsty gold digging that can still translate into success and wealth for you in the long-term.

If anyone says, "Well, I saw you reading the Marry Rich book. What would Ginie Sayles say to you about marrying someone without money?"

Look them in the eye and say, "Are you kidding? Ginie gave me her blessing!"

And I do. Your happiness. Your

choices. That is what this book is ultimately about. Bless you!

Classy Endings

“There is no guarantee a relationship with an RM will last. But there is no guarantee a relationship with a poor person will last, either—but wouldn’t you rather cry into a silk pillow rather than a

cotton one?"
—*Ginie Sayles*



©1983 Ginie Polo

It was fun—

There are Classy ways to move out of a marriage or out of a live-in relationship.

Wean Away. Act as if you are just ‘changing’ the marriage or relationship, not ending it. One very clever wife of an RM told him that she wanted to take a small apartment close to the hospital where she was the head volunteer; and that she would only stay over there a couple of times a week.

She was smart enough never to have a man over to the apartment and she went home most nights. After a month of two, she would leave a message for her husband that she was staying over at the apartment. Again, she never had a man

over to her apartment. She knew her husband might suspect and check on it.

Eventually, she was spending more time at the apartment and finally told her husband she needed her own separate life.

Preserve Your Spouse's/Lover's Ego. Try to preserve your spouse's ego—that she or he is a wonderful person and it is not their fault; but that you have changed and those changes have nothing to do with your spouse and there is no blame for either of you. Say that you love and respect her or him as person and always will; but you must move on.

If Money Is Involved. You may

need to lay blame on your spouse so that in the divorce court, you have a greater chance for a good financial settlement—all the more true if you signed a prenuptial agreement. But, if at all possible keep it between the two of you and again, if at all possible, try to preserve a line of communication that is mutually respectful.

Classy Curtain Calls If Your Mate Leaves You

Sadly, sometimes a relationship ends for the other person before it ends for you. And that is tough.

Preserve Your Own Ego. You will be prouder of yourself someday if you

do not send emails, text messages, leave voice mails or try in any way at all to stay in touch with an RM who has ended the relationship.

You will also be prouder of yourself someday if you do not stalk or try to find out who has replaced you in the RM's life. Stop trying to tell

Yes, yes, yes, damnit, it hurts!!!
And You may run an understandable gamut of feelings—pain, anger (rage may be more like it), feelings of failure, wondering what is lacking in you, wondering if you can fix it, and if there is someone else, you may feel especially wounded.

—Do not continue to call, making up reasons you 'need' to discuss or get

help or ask questions about. DO NOT CALL for ANY REASON.

—No sending cute cards, notes or emails. And do not write down your feelings and send it to the RM

—No more sex. One man used to go by his ex's place for sex and quick shower but not to continue the relationship.

—Just have a passing friendliness if you accidentally cross paths.

Successful Woman Who Ended Relationships

I know a woman who ‘worked her way up’ to marrying well. She never left

a man until she had another one who was serious about her. She has been married four times, beginning when she was eighteen years old.

Her first husband was a brute who beat her, had her work as a stripper and took her money to pay his bills.

When she finally realized he was a worthless liar, she stayed with him until she contacted an old flame she had dated in high school and who was now in college.

Her old flame knew nothing of her job but knew she was separating from her husband. He would pick her up and take her back to her girlfriend's apartment and from there, she would go back to the place she lived with her

husband.

Once the flame was reignited between them, her old flame asked that she marry him as soon as her divorce was final. And she did. While her husband was in college, she decided to go, too; and ended up with a college degree as well as a couple of children.

Unfortunately, her old flame ended up having a difficult time keeping work. He worked sporadically, so, once again, supporting the family fell to her.

She stayed with him until her children were in school and then began seriously looking for someone else. She went through a few men who were only interested in having an affair but not a serious relationship. Eventually, her

husband began cheating, too, and their marriage ended acrimoniously.

After three years as a struggling divorced mom, she met a decent, hard-working man who was also getting a divorce and they moved in together and married as soon as his divorce was final.

Unfortunately, her new husband decided to go into business for himself and the old pattern of unpredictable funds meant she had to make up the difference. And then, she said he did not like to travel and she was curious to see more of the world, so she had to go with a girlfriend, rather than to enjoy romantic trips with her spouse.

Since he often slept during the

day, he liked watching television through the night, especially sports channels, which bothered her sleep. When she complained, he moved into the living room.

After a week or two, she told him that she had never seen a marriage work out well when couples slept apart but he refused to move back into their bedroom.

With no further complaints, this woman began to get 'busy' telling her husband she was now involved in club meetings, organizations, political rallies, and other activities, which kept her so busy, he seldom saw her.

And, surely enough, she met exactly the man she needed. He had a

doctorate degree, had held a respected position for twenty-five years and made a very, very good living. He owned property, had investments, and a good social life.

Without saying anything to anyone, she found an apartment, put up a deposit, and began moving out. Her husband came home and found a moving van being loaded with her personal possessions.

She pretended she was not leaving him and not getting a divorce, just creating a second location where she could get more work done and that they were still married. This is **‘changing the relationship’** or making the other person ‘think’ you are merely

changing the relationship, not ending it.

She let him come over a few times, even slept with him a few times; but then he was served with divorce papers and also a restraining order.

A year and a half after her divorce was final, she married the new man. They are both middle-aged, no children living at home, and they have plenty of money and have enjoyed a variety of travel experiences together. At last, she has exactly what she wants!

In each case, she protected herself by getting something else lined up before leaving and each marriage increased her ability to take the next step. Hoorah for her Class Act.

When you are finished with a

relationship, you do not owe explanations or anything else to the other person, who may resist and cause problems. Protect yourself and move on!

PART VI

The Power Of Inner Richness

63

Inner Richness
– **Dynamics of**
Fulfillment and Joy

-

“Inner Richness is a developed state of mind that expresses itself through the

*unfailing power of three
specific acts.”*
—*Ginie Sayles*



Inner Richness is a power you will want to utilize in your life. It adds true Richness to the texture of your life, as a person. And the three acts of Inner Richness keep your life moving forward.

If it is true that we attract to us our own level of thought and values, then the foundation for marrying the Rich is to restructure our thoughts and values.

I do not try to explain how these principles work. I think it is presumptuous of anyone to fully ‘know’ how Life operates. I only know that these three Acts of Inner Richness work for me.

You must understand that Inner Richness is not just a sweet way of thinking. Inner Richness boils down to

three very specific “acts.”

The Three Acts are:

- An Act of Faith
- An Act of Giving
- An Act of Releasing
Grievances

When you integrate these three behaviors into your life, you can literally *feel* the difference inside yourself and in your life.

You grow as a person and you become more worthy of the Riches you desire. The following chapters explain exactly how to perform each of the three acts that strengthen your Inner Richness.

64

Inner Richness

Power

Of Faith

**– The Substance Of
Things Unseen –**

“*You can Create Faith*”—
Ginie Sayles

Faith can be a confusing term. Faith is not just saying, “Oh, I believe...” and then doing nothing about it.

No, indeed. If you really have *faith*, you will realize that *faith is an act of risk*. Let’s look at the double-faceted quality of faith.

Faith is ACTION

Faith is a RISK

Faith is an ACT

The best example of faith I can think of is a farmer. A farmer goes out into a barren field with nothing but teeny, tiny seeds that bear no resemblance to the wheat or corn the farmer wants to see waving in the now barren field.

Yet, the farmer goes out, day after day, and works hard, plowing and planting the tiny seed into the empty field.

Why?

Because the farmer *believes* that through the ACTION (faith) of plowing the field and the ACTION (faith) of planting the seed and the ACTION

(faith) of tending it; that the field will, in time, be converted into waves and waves of beautiful wheat, instead of a barren field.

If the farmer did nothing but say, “I believe wheat will grow in the field; the farmer could be right, but there would be no wheat without the action of faith in plowing, planting, tending. Action is the Faith

Faith is a RISK

If there is no possibility of loss, then faith is not required. No, the double-faceted quality of faith requires that you face opposition—and

sometimes, even that you fail.

The farmer may stand in heartbreak, helplessly watching the crops ravaged by hail or flood or drought. All the hard work destroyed.

There is no denying the pain you risk when you have enough faith to take action. And the pain cannot be minimized, either.

But faith is an ACT that, although the you may fail many times, you go ahead and experience the pain, and eventually assess what you can do to minimize loss but you go for winning again!

That is what the farmer does. And that is what you do, too. When relationships fail, you cry, if it hurts, you

steam and stomp, if it makes you angry and you may need a tiny breather. But, like the farmer, you stay aware that there are planting seasons in life. One season failed but another waits.

Failure is just a word. It is a part of the Learning Curve that helps you accumulate information until you know how to do something the best way possible. And it helps you realize there are some circumstances—like the farmer—that you cannot control.

Faith is not about guaranteeing an outcome. Faith is about acting on what you can control – buying the seed, plowing, planting, tending—and at some point, my dear friend, as farmers can attest, it can pay off.

Realize that in the face of failure, faith still believes it can be done and acts on it until it *is* done.

Change What You Say To Build Faith

What if you do not have faith? What if you try and try and try to believe something will happen for you, but you still feel as if you are lying to yourself and you are afraid it will not happen?

Well, one thought process is canceling out the other so that you are immobilized—unable to act—and nothing changes in your life.

Do not worry. Faith can be

developed.

How?

Faith comes by hearing; therefore, you must guard your words carefully so that what you hear yourself saying is what you **want** to believe and what you want to happen.

Words start wars and words end them. Words are powerful and they can create the world you live in. Words are keys that unlock doors.

As a teenager, I once said to my mother as she drove past an office building, “Just think, Mom, all you have to do is to know the right words to use with people in those offices and they will let you in.” For some reason, I had

glimpsed a truth I would 1 more fully understand later.

Begin to heal and redirect your life by choosing your words about yourself and about your life as carefully as you can.

Now, do not become obsessively superstitious; but, by and large, your words are the single most important ally that you have in reaching your goals.

Many people use affirmations today and I am no exception. I think affirmations are a form of prayer that states aloud your mental agreement with good for your life, rather than a prayer of begging (which you can use, too, of course).

Positive Self- Reprogramming

I refer to affirmations as:

Prayers Spoken In Positive Faith
Positive Self-Reprogramming
Statements.

That is really what they are. I found that when I began using them, my world changed. I still use affirmations for specific goals.

The first time I said my positive reprogramming statements, I was halfway into it, when I stopped and said to myself, “I’m lying! I don’t feel the way these statements say I feel.”

I have never been able to lie to myself, so I stopped saying affirmative statements for several days.

Suddenly, it dawned on me that a statement is a lie only if it is something that has already happened in the past and you are saying it is different from the way it happened.

But an affirming Positive Statement states and present and the present is in progress and has not happened yet. That means you can stop whatever is in progress and decide to change course—by reprogramming whatever is in progress.

I can *choose* to feel—right now—the way the positive statement states

that I feel. It states that I feel that way in the present and I can choose to do that right now.

Immediately, I returned to saying my affirmation/positive reprogramming statements and I did so with great emotion, vigor, and allowed myself not to ‘hope to feel’ but to choose to let myself “know the feeling” as I said each statement.

Once I knew it was not a lie, I knew it was a possibility. And I could open myself up to possibilities. It could be real and I chose to open myself to the desires of my heart really happening in my life.

Why 21 Times For 21 Days?

For maximum effectiveness, you are supposed to make a positive self-reprogramming statement 21 times in a row for 21 days.

There is no hocus-pocus magic in making your statements 21 times for 21 days. Very simply, it has been shown that a human being takes about 3 weeks (which is 21 days) to form a new habit.

Also, it takes repetition of up to about 21 times in a row to correct an error—for example, a mistake in playing a musical instrument. If you deliberately practice the ‘correct’ notes over and

over 21 times, you have corrected the error.

So, if you combine the repetition of correcting what you say to yourself 21 times in a row, and do so daily for 3 weeks (21 days), your thinking takes on a new habit—you have reprogrammed yourself.

Once you have done this, you have also programmed faith—and because faith is an act, you will begin to act in accordance with the new way you believe.

Faith comes by hearing. Choose what you want to believe and then let yourself hear it over and over until faith takes hold. You will know when that happens because you *will* begin

automatically to act in accordance with it. You will act as if you believe it, because you *will* believe it. Your personality will project happy expectation, natural anticipation of good.

We are going to be thinking thoughts all day long, anyway, so why not choose the thoughts we want to have about the things we want to have happen.

My faith took hold very quickly and results began flowing into my life before the 3 weeks ended.

Positive Self- Reprogramming

Statements

Preliminary Affirmations: For mental and emotional cleansing, so nothing impedes you; straighten your priorities by stating each of the four following Priority Affirmations 3 consecutive times before stating your Goal Affirmations.

I, (your name), now accept responsibility for all my relationships—past, present, and future—with the opposite sex. I alone am responsible for the choices I make that allow relationships into my life.

I, (your name), maintain personal

safety as my first priority in developing relationships. Personal safety includes a sensible awareness of physical and mental safety in forming relationships.

I, (your name), now unbind and release from my soul, all binding unforgiveness from (*name the situation or person*). I set you free from the bondage of my emotions and my thoughts and truly wish you happiness and joy in the grace of God forever.

I, (your name), now give to Life and know that I, too, shall be given unto. I give radiant joy, sparkling humor, and a wealth of enthusiasm to everyone whose life touches mine. I receive and welcome back into me the inflow of love

and richness that is mine by divine law and unlimited abundance and love.

Goal Affirmations

Choose 1 or up to 3 of the following affirmations to say 21 times a day for 21 days. If you want to say them all, you can; but you can choose just 1 or 2, if you like.

I, _____, am now ready and joyously accept the Great and Glorious Good that is entering my life now.

I, _____, now meet just the right people at just the right time, for pleasure and for business.

I, _____, have fearless faith that love, prosperity, and

happiness are mine and I welcome them into my life now.

I, _____, now accept complete happiness, abundant health, fulfilling love, and increasing prosperity. Everything I do shall prosper.

I, _____, agree to receive joy, fulfilling love, abundance, opportunity, and peace.

I, _____, accept all the good that is mine by Divine Law. There is love in the Universe and a fulfilling love relationship blossoming in my life now.

I, _____, now receive the daily joy of fulfilling love and prosperity and simultaneously

release relationships and situations that no longer bring fulfillment or happiness in my life and I wish those people and situations well.

I, _____, accept my total and complete worthiness as a perfect creation of the Father.

I, _____, expect the unexpected, my glorious good now comes to pass.

I, _____, expect wondrous good times and acknowledge that the right relationship is manifesting in my life now.

I, _____, have a rich consciousness and attract the same. I attract people who are interesting, successful, and aware who

love me.

I, _____, absolutely
deserve fulfilling love.

A man who read an earlier edition of this book sent me a beautiful scarf for Christmas that he made for me as part of his therapy while he was recuperating in the hospital.

He wrote that he almost died from a severe case of Leukemia and that during his darkest days, he repeated the above affirmations over and over and over, keeping his mind receptive to good in all forms for his mind, body, and soul.

I cherish the scarf and each year,

as we decorate our Christmas tree, we lay out the scarf on our fireplace mantel and share his story again.

As you look over the Goal Affirmations, choose the one or so that leaps out to you and has instant meaning to you now.

Optional Reinforcement

The most important thing you can do is to say the affirmations out loud where you can hear yourself saying them, and to say them with growing enthusiasm, like a little pep rally.

But, if you want to add extra imprints in your mind, you can write the

affirmations you choose 21 times each.

We often hear ourselves referred to in second person as ‘you’ or in third person as ‘he’ or as ‘she.’ So, if you like, you can also record your own voice reading your chosen affirmation 21 times in a row each in the following ways—and then go to sleep at night listening to it every night:

For example using my name:

—I, Ginie Sayles, am now ready and joyously accept the Great and Glorious Good that is entering my life.

—You, Ginie Sayles, are now ready and joyously accept the Great and Glorious Good that is entering your life.

—She, Ginie Sayles, is now ready and joyously accepts the Great and

Glorious Good that is entering her life.

Visualization

Anytime we think about the future with an idea of what we would like to have happen, our visualization process kicks in.

In my book, *How To WIN Pageants*, I point out that many national pageant winners, such as former Miss America, Gretchen Carlson, who, today, is a newscaster on the Fox Network, used visualization as a tool.

Many successful athletes and sports competitors utilize visualization. Visualization does generate anticipation, with a by-product of positive behavior

in a person. Your brain often programs in the image you desire as if you have attained it.

Keep It Healthy— Visualization Is Not A Religion

Do NOT make a religious doctrine out of either affirmations or visualization. You can get into kooky stuff easily, and also into following a guru who puts you through paces of adoration for the guru and the guru's financial goals.

Instead look at affirmations and visualization as educational tools. That

is exactly what they are. Tools for inner-development and outer achievement. Tools and tools only. They are quasi scientific methods used often by psychologists to help you focus on goals.

They are methods to help you set your own programming for what you want. Viewing it that way, you will have a healthy success with it.

All such tools are to be used to illuminate a richer Inner Richness in you so that you deserve the wealth in love and marriage that you seek.

The Fabric Of Faith

What does it mean to say, “faith is the substance of things unseen”?

Substance means ‘physical matter,’ that something is made of...a type of fabric.

Think of a tailor who spreads fabric or a stretch of leather in front of him. Then, the tailor draws a pattern on the fabric, designing what the tailor wants to make from the fabric.

Faith is an invisible fabric that you stretch before your mind. Your desire is a pattern design of what you want to make of your life. The consistency of your desire in a mental picture reinforces the pattern.

Action becomes the scissors that cut out the fabric of faith.

Your Positive Words are threads of anticipation that stitch your faith together in daily action toward your

desire until it becomes reality.

True, there are obstacles that require alterations, just as the tailor may discover the size for the garment is a little off...a nip or tuck is needed here and there to make it a better fit for your life. This does not mean making it less, but making it better. It is the substance of things unseen—an invisible fabric—for your life.

65

Inner Richness
Power
Of Giving

**– Dynamics of
Fulfillment and Joy**



*“When you give to the poor,
do not let your left hand
know what your right hand is
doing.”*

—Matthew 6:1 & 3

Giving Is An ACT

What you give are resources of your personality, not money, until you

have money to give. Yes, if you can give money anonymously to help someone financially and never tell anyone you did it, then do so.

But give, give, give encouragement to others, give a loving nature and vibrant happiness to all the happiness-starved, attention-starved people everywhere you go.

At times, we may be unable to give financial assistance to those in need; but we can always give cheerful attention to business executives and equally to their secretaries, to the cashiers in stores, to your best friend, to a friendly neighborhood pet, to an elderly shopper, to a bored child tagging along with preoccupied

parents.

If you become fully aware of people everywhere you go and respond to their existence, without lingering; you cannot imagine how much magnetism you will begin generating.

Realize that, although you are interested in marrying money, it is not because you consider a person who has money as superior to anyone else.

Of course not. You consider people in general to be precious. You may not date someone without money; but only because you know you would not be happy together—not because you consider any less of the person.

Give kindness and appreciation

to people as much as possible. It is not always possible because you are human. But really try to be loving.

One mental trick I performed is that when I saw a wealthy, successful person and also when I saw a person whose life seemed in the pain of waster, I would look at the person and think, “I am you and you are me” to remind myself there is no line of demarcation in the human soul.

Once you are able to give money, *give secretly*. Do not tell anyone—not a friend, not a parent, no one! And never let the person know you have given money to them.

In any case, give recognition for the good in other people. Many times I

have seen my dreams fulfilled shortly after such an act of giving. Once, I longed for a particular opportunity. Realizing how limited and hopeless my chances were, my mind also wandered to older people and how limited and hopeless some of them may feel about their lives.

I thought of my elderly aunts, whom I had not seen in years. I wrote each one a letter, telling them how much what they had given in kindness to me as a child had meant in my life.

Within hours of that small act of giving recognition, the door of opportunity I had thought impossible, suddenly came to me in a surprising way; and my opportunity was fulfilled

Giving That Obligates No One

To You: I believe that one of the greatest gifts we can give others is encouragement and sunny good cheer. Give your encouragement and vibrance and **go!** Make no claim upon the other person's time. Seek nothing back. Let them enjoy it without feeling imposed upon.

Give treasures of your personality without lingering. Give the joy of your personality. Give, give, give.

66

*Inner Richness
Power Of
Releasing
Grievances*

- An Unfailing Power –

“When you release a person who has wronged you to his or her own good, you are actually releasing yourself to your own good.”—Ginie Sayles

Releasing Grievances Is An ACT

Every time my life has been stuck and when I am truly ready to get unstuck so my life can move forward, I

do three things:

I ask myself, “Okay, who is it that I feel anger or hurt toward for a grievance?” Typically, one person will surface very quickly in my mind; and sometimes more than one person.

The grievance that I feel toward that person may be more than justified; and it usually is. Thinking about it may stir up my fury or hurt, which is understandable.

I choose to take a positive ACTION that is the exact opposite of the anger or pain I feel. I write a very brief note of encouragement to that person, which I either email or snail mail to the person. Usually snail mail has more impact.

The rules for writing this note are:

1. The note must be very brief

2. The problem between us is never mentioned in the note.

—To mention the wrong the person did cancels out my act of releasing.

—To mention the wrong perpetuates the power of the wrong over me.

—To mention the wrong keeps my life stuck.

EXAMPLE:

Dear Suzy (or Sam),

I was happy to learn you received the great promotion you wanted.

You will surely do well and I will be cheering for you, always.

Good luck!

Ginie

I use the post office—to ‘snail-mail’ the note or notes to people.

The rule for postal mailing—not

mailing—the note are:

One: You do not care what the person thinks of your note.

Two: Do not put a return address on your envelope if you send a note. To put a return address is asking for a response. You do not want a response. That sucks you back into the unresolved emotions that you are trying to resolve.

If you email it; do so from a no-reply email address or from a dummy email address that you can delete after sending.

Three: You are finished with this person and you have finished with that person through encouragement and forgiveness. Do not reinstate a

relationship with the person or you are setting yourself up for future pain. You are forgiving, yes; but you are not a fool.

If you happen to bump into or to see the person, you are friendly, of course, because there is no problem between you anymore; but you do not get involved again. You now let the person go his or her own way, without any curiosity on your part, without any involvement on your part, without any interference on your part.

You have released this person to his or her own good.

You have released yourself to your own good, too.

Often, within hours or a few days, my life has leapt forward in amazing ways.

RELEASING OTHERS RELEASES YOU

When you have accomplished this, you will feel so light and free! And you *are* free. There is no more bondage in your heart and soul.

When you bind other people in your heart and soul with grievances, you bind yourself—and your life is stuck. You have given your power to that person, who does not deserve to have that power over your life. You have bound your own heart and soul and your

life to the negative power of anger and pain; and you cannot go forward as long as it binds your heart and soul and your creative mind.

Forgiveness is not a mental process of just saying, "I forgive so-and-so." No, that is too easy and it does not work. **Forgiveness is the Act of Releasing a person to his/her own good, which, in turn releases you to your own good.**

I confess that **I cannot always forgive someone immediately. It may take days, weeks, months, even a year or so in some cases;** but I have found that once I do it, I wish I had done it sooner. The benefits are far, far greater than the grievance, even though I may

have been in the right about it.

Believe me, you will want to learn and to utilize this tremendous power of forgiveness, because it moves your life forward in giant leaps.

You can combine the Act of Giving and the Act of Releasing by SECRETLY giving to the person who has disappointed you, if you know the person needs something. Never let them know and never try to find out anything about it. Never let anyone know you did it.

Again, the secret to success is the word 'secret.' The Bible reads: "When you give, don't let your right hand know what your left hand is doing...The Bible further states that when you broadcast

your good deeds, that is the only glory you will receive.

The Power of Faith, Giving, Releasing Grievances,

Somehow—and I do not claim to know how—our Acts of Faith, our Acts of Giving and our Acts of Releasing Grievances are the doors of opportunity and fulfillment to what we wish to create of our lives.

If we are facing blockages, they may be blockages of our own emotions, our own limited view of our world, blockages of pain in our own

soul. Pettiness keeps people trapped in a small world; and I have seldom seen petty people succeed.

I want you to succeed...and you can.

Noblesse Obligée

**—Responsibility,
Not Morality—**

*“External objects are
meaningless in and of
themselves, if they are not*

*used to express a moment of
joy or happiness.”*

—Ginie Sayles

This book is not a book on morals. It tells you how to pursue what you want. However, you will be more successful if you adopt a few Old Money values about being wealthy. They follow a code of “Noblesse Obligéé” meaning “obligations of nobility.”

Nobility does not dominate all societies anymore, but the Rich often consider their money has putting them in the same category as nobility and; as

always, when people get Rich they copy-cat the social behaviors that were set in motion centuries ago by nobility. The Social Rich, especially, try to learn and to live as if they are ‘nobility.’

Like those born into nobility, the Social Rich come to believe their money entitles them to best in life; and that money also obligates them to “give back” to society some of the Richness that our form of society has allowed them to acquire.

They do this through volunteer work, through large-scale charity fund-raising events, and through various foundations and donations.

History has proven that when a civilization is prosperous and

functioning at its highest achievements:

—Women, children, and the elderly are as highly valued as men in that society and that all rights are equal for both sexes, including education.

—Art flourishes in all its forms—literature, painting, sculpture, dance, music, theater, and other innovations.

—There are advanced developments in mathematics and the sciences.

The enlightened Rich know this; and they consider it a duty to further civilization for both sexes. They also further civilization by becoming patrons to artists, and financial supporters of

scientific research. The Rich think of themselves as pacesetters of respectability.

Are These Values Necessary For A Rich Marriage?

You can marry an RM without the values of Noblesse Oblige; but to fully enjoy the Richness of self that money can afford you, you will want to make yourself over from the inside-out, with values that include responsibility to society at large and to your RM.

For those people who say that marrying money is prostitution (which is

a profession that is really no one else's business), I clearly tell you that the difference is that prostitution is a specific amount of money for a specific act whereas marriage to the Rich is a committed relationship in a Rich setting.

Let's make it clear too; that although you want to be Rich, you will not commit a crime or injure or (yipes) murder anyone in order to get it. Value for people come first and then money.

And, mercenary though you are, you would never abandon an RM facing financial crisis who has befriended you with both his dollar and his name.

Even in the face of a scandal, you stand beside your RM—man or woman—until the crisis subsides. After the

crisis, you can leave if you want to. You will have the respect of other RMs who witnessed or heard of your strength of character. This can enhance your chances of a future with other RMs.

It is worthwhile to develop these values that contribute to Richness of self because external objects are meaningless in and of themselves, if they are not used to express a fine inner quality of respect for life, love, beauty, and kindness.

It is only what each object represents to us, individually and socially, and from the frame of reference we have, that gives it value at all.

You want money because of the luxurious trappings it provides, yes; and

you also want it because it sets you free to become the best you that you can be — to develop yourself, to express yourself, and to elevate life for others in ways you never could have before you married your RM.

Yes, you can earn Riches yourself; but by the time you have married your RM, you **HAVE** earned it yourself! You have worked hard to become the best and most prized asset to an RM of all his or her assets.

An old, old saying is that “you can become Richer in just 10 minutes in a marriage ceremony than you can working for years.”

You can still pursue a career and make a fortune yourself before, during,

and after you have married your RM.

Besides, even if you do earn riches on your own, there is still the problem of finding a mate who shares your monetary and new social values. It is EFFICIENT to resolve your romantic and your financial needs in one contract—marriage.

So, keep feeding your desire system—which is your key to marrying the Rich. Control your life by changing. Be willing to make mistakes in order to improve. Create a high visibility for yourself; and, first, last, and always, I repeat, fatten up your desire system until it consumes you.

You can and should judge people by their hearts and not their money; but

remember that sex, love, and money are
the dynamics of any marriage
relationship and, after all...**the Rich will
marry someone, why YOU?**

**The Rich Will Marry Someone,
Why Not YOU?™** —Ginie Sayles



Copyright © 1990, 2011, 2014 by GINIE SAYLES
ALL RIGHTS RESERVED